

**The Book of**  
**Lillie**

**A Journey into the Light**

**The Oracles of God --  
Not New Words,  
But New Revelations**

By Lillie Pearl

New World Revelation Press

Copyright © 2004 by The University of Spiritual Awakening, Inc.

## **The Book of Lillie: A Journey into the Light**

### **The Oracles of God -- Not New Words, but New Revelations**

By Lillie Pearl

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher. No abridgement or changes to the text are authorized by the publisher. Let no one take away or add to the writings in this Body of Knowledge.

Published by New World Revelation Press, a division of the University of Spiritual Awakening, Inc. a not-for-profit Tennessee-based church.

New World Revelation Press  
P.O. Box 2085, Brentwood, Tennessee 37024

Printed in the United States of America

Ordering information:  
ISBN 0-9762105-1-7  
<http://www.nwrp.org>  
email: [office@nwrp.org](mailto:office@nwrp.org)

#### Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Pearl, Lillie.

The book of lillie : a journey into the light. the oracles of God -- not new words, but new revelations / Lillie Pearl.

p. cm.

ISBN 0-9762105-1-7

1. Christianity--Study and teaching. 2. Jesus Christ--Miscellanea. 3. Bible--Criticism, interpretation, etc. 4. Allegorical interpretations of the Bible.

2004

230





# Table of Contents

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS	Page vii
FOREWORD	Page ix
AN INSIDER’S LOOK AT THE MESSAGE AND THE MESSENGER	Page xi
I AM THOMAS, THE WITNESS	Page xv
Chapter 1 THE PIONEER	Page 1
Chapter 2 ABOUT LILLIE, THE AUTHOR	Page 11
Chapter 3 THE ORACLES OF GOD: WHAT ARE THEY?	Page 23
Chapter 4 THE PEARL OF GREAT PRICE	Page 29
Chapter 5 I FOUND IT! NOW WHAT?	Page 41
Chapter 6 THE DEVIL MADE ME DO IT	Page 49
Chapter 7 THE DEVIL IS A LIE	Page 63
Chapter 8 THE ANTI-CHRIST	Page 71
Chapter 9 FOLLOWING THE LEADER	Page 77
Chapter 10 LET’S TALK ABOUT THE TITHE: WILL A MAN ROB GOD?	Page 85
Chapter 11 THE DEATH, BURIAL AND RESURRECTION OF THE SEED CALLED SOUL	Page 93
Chapter 12 REALIZATION VERSUS IMAGINATION	Page 103
Chapter 13 LET FREEDOM REIGN	Page 111
Chapter 14 TALK THE TALK	Page 117

Chapter 15	THE PLAY GOES ON	Page 123
Chapter 16	IF THOU CANST BELIEVE, IT'S ALL IN A SEED!	Page 131
Chapter 17	THE BEGINNING OF THE THIRD DAY	Page 143
Chapter 18	CONSIDER THE LILIES: HOW THEY GROW	Page 157
Chapter 19	THE ABODE OF GOD IS THE WORD OF GOD	Page 191
Chapter 20	I AM MY OWN FATHER	Page 205
Chapter 21	THE SCROLL	Page 213
Chapter 22	BEING MINDFUL OF THE PRESENCE	Page 219
Chapter 23	WHEN WILL YOU BE WHO YOU ARE?	Page 227
Chapter 24	ME, MY, AND I EMBODY ALL I DESIRE	Page 235
Chapter 25	HEAVEN: WHAT AND WHERE IS IT?	Page 239
Chapter 26	A WORD TO THE WISE ABOUT BEING "SAVED"	Page 245
Appendix 1	THE PARALLELS OF FAITH, HOPE, AND CHARITY	Page 255
Appendix 2	NAMES FOR THE DEVIL	Page 257
Appendix 3	LEARNING MORE ABOUT THIS MESSAGE	Page 259

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I want to express my heartfelt thanks to my husband, James, for the consistent manner in which he has always provided me with great encouragement and undivided support in every area that my work has taken me. His tender heart and willing Soul is truly a treasure. He has been formed, made, and prepared to assist at this time of the world's Souls' experiences and changes during the emergence into the new dispensation.

My thanks to Dan Stockin for his tireless typing, editing, and all-around assistance, giving of himself as only he can! His genuine desire and willingness to give of himself so freely is a statement of his character, his dedication, and his commitment to fulfill his calling and purpose in this hour of Man's journey toward the Light. To Elva (Little Bit): you are a real trooper! Many sincere thanks to you for sharing yourself and your husband with so many!

My special thanks to Jenny Julien, my secretary and all-around helper. A personal, Divine gift from God to me, she is a truly beautiful Soul, committed and dedicated to the calling of a genuine handmaiden, and formed by the Spirit of Love and devotion. *Thank you, Jenny, for the many ways in which you serve me.*

My special thanks to Barbara and Matthew Havens for your assistance in typing, running errands, and the endless other ways you have shown your love and appreciation for Truth. Your willingness to give of yourselves to assist others in their search for Truth has always been evident. Because of you giving yourselves so freely over the years, you have been a source of help for many to find true value in knowing and possessing the real treasures of life: Peace, Love, and Joy.

A very special and tender acknowledgement to my son, Thomas, for all the years of your life that you have been a source of strength, Love, and inspiration to me. Thank you for the times when you were least aware of the courage and fortitude I was able to gain because of you. I am truly grateful and proud that you chose me to be your mother. ***My blessings and deepest Love to you, my son!***

*My blessings* I consciously and purposefully place upon the life of each Soul who has assisted in the giving of their prayers, encouraging words, finances, and the many other ways of support they have given. Their names are too many to list, but you know who you are! Blessings to you!

Last and most important of all, I express my deepest gratitude to ***THE ONE LIGHT AND SPIRIT*** that has so honored me with these precious gifts of Knowledge, Divine Wisdom, and Understanding of Truth.

My prayer and sincere heart's desire is that every Soul will accept these gifts as their very own, understanding that *all things are already yours*, just for the acceptance of them!



## **FOREWORD**

Of all the things that you could be doing now, isn't it interesting that circumstances have developed that you are holding this book in your hands at this moment? Think how many things have been perfectly orchestrated together so that you would read the words in front of you now. Your heart had to continue functioning since you arose this morning. Your brain neurons continue to fire with microbursts of electricity to enable you to see the text on the page and comprehend it. The roof of the building you are in or near is being held in place without collapsing onto you. The earth under you has continued to offer solid ground that you might stand upon it. Someone cared enough about this book and its message that they spent the time and finances to write and print it. And you could have talked on the phone or walked past this book, but instead you find yourself now reading it.

Yes, a million slightly altered circumstances could have changed your experience, but instead you now hold in your hand *The Book of Lillie*. Is there a purpose for you holding this book in your hand? I would suggest that there is.

In 1980 while in the last period of my undergraduate college training, a voice inside me began to say the name *San Diego*. Over and over again over a period of months I heard the persistent intonation of the name of this city. I did not know anyone in San Diego. I did not live in San Diego. Yet the voice kept on, urgently calling to me. Why did this voice continue so strangely? I did not know the answer.

Suddenly in the space of a day at the beginning of 1981, I knew. With only one semester left to graduate, I knew I must simply drive away and go live in San Diego. It seemed crazy to do so, but despite my friends' and family's objections, that night I simply

drove away until I arrived in San Diego. I arrived with a few dollars, a beat-up 1965 Chevrolet, and some clothing. Little did I know who else arrived that same day in San Diego, coming from another place completely across the country.

As you may surmise, I wound up meeting that person. Her name was Lillie Pearl. The Message she shared with me changed my entire life. Not one part of my life has not been deeply and positively affected by the Message of Life she lived and spoke.

I had always wanted to know and serve “God,” but her Message showed me that to serve God I must seek after Truth, at the cost of all else. I had always claimed I was “saved,” but Lillie Pearl patiently showed me that “he that endures *to the end*, he shall *be* saved.” I was bound by habits and fears that I could not overcome, and her Message provided me with a freedom that was above and beyond my wildest hopes.

Best of all, I learned that every question already has an answer -- an answer for me here and now, on earth. I do not need to die and go to heaven to have *knowing*. In fact, I do not ever need to die! And the best answer of all was to a question I had not even consciously asked: who was I? Her Message told me my True Identity.

I challenge you to approach this book differently than any other book you have ever read, for in it are the answers to every question you have. This book is your Inner Voice calling you to wake up to a new revelation about the Self that you are. *You are not who you think you are.*

I was present to watch with wonder as this book descended from the heavens through the willing and open hand of Lillie Pearl. I bear witness to its Source. *This book does not contain new words, but rather new revelations -- about your Self.* It is for your knowledge of your Self that millions of circumstances have danced together today to place this book in your hand.

Dan Stockin  
September 2004

## AN INSIDER'S LOOK AT THE MESSAGE AND THE MESSENGER

As James, the husband of Lillie Pearl, I have had the unique and honored position to witness the living evidence of the Message as it is lived through the Messenger. These two, the Message and the Messenger, cannot be separated. If the Message is universal in its application and infinitely radiant in its Truth, then these characteristics will likewise be evident in the life of the Messenger. I am humbly proud to say that there has not been one day, one hour or one moment when my wife Lillie Pearl has not lived her Message, no matter the circumstances or worldly illusions. She is the real thing. The Message Lillie Pearl brings is without question graduate level work that is only suitable to the graduate level Soul. No mistakes have been made or are possible to make; you are reading this book as part of your marvelous appointment with destiny -- **your destiny**.

As my college professor recounted many times, "If it is no good in practice, it is no good in theory!" I think we can agree on the truth inherent in this axiom and therefore we can further agree that it is quite impossible to overstate the importance of putting this Message (any message) to the test.

A theory is just that, a theory. I imagine that gravity was once a theory for every youngster. But when one experiences the effects of the gravity for the very first time, it rapidly transitions from the theoretical into practical law. This works the very same for each Soul who puts Truth to the test -- Truth works every time, all the time.

What cause or goal on planet earth could be superior to that of shattering the chains of man's illusion and ignorance? When through its own diligence and work Soul finally comes to stand

as Lord and Master over itself, the guessing and wondering are all finished and the work is done. All speculation and wishful thinking concerning the nature of life, this three-dimensional world and the life beyond this planet are vanquished forever.

It is a truism to say that everything worthwhile is worth beginning in the state where you find yourself. For me, when I discovered Lillie Pearl some 14 years ago, I was broken and pathetic. I had violated every promise I had ever made to myself (God) but had managed to keep the world around me from seeing my inner agony. After removing all the alcohol and drugs from my life in an attempt to clean my outer conditions for the sake of those observing me, I found myself without the anesthesia that had long kept my introspective capability asleep. In my sober state, I quickly became disgusted with who and what I had become and I agonized over all those I had hurt. My executive position, comfortable life style and accumulation of earthly “things” had lost their appeal and power to maintain my desire to continue living and I contemplated various scenarios for ending the façade. I had no hope.

On a Friday evening while all alone in a deepening state of depression, my Lillie Pearl appeared on the television for a fraction of a instant as I flipped through the channels with the remote. In that second that I heard her voice, bells began to ring loudly in my head, my heart jumped into my throat and all of my senses immediately came to attention. I frantically attempted to find the channel that carried her voice. I did find the channel, her voice, and her Message quite literally changed me forever. I intuitively knew that the Message I heard coming through Lillie Pearl that night was the Message of Life. The Message, quite literally, was my savior.

As I began to hear more and more of her Message over the next few weeks, my life took on a completely new direction. All of the previous Eastern philosophies I had studied, all of the western religions I had explored, all of the mystery school studies I had consumed and all of the secular training I had received -- none of

which served me in my moment of need -- were now trumped by the words of the Messenger Lillie Pearl. As a result, I did what I never knew I was able to do, but what I now know all must do if they desire to know Truth for themselves: I surrendered. My life was then renewed word by word, my vision cleared, my energy was restored and my commitment to KNOW for myself redoubled! The Message of Lillie Pearl gave me Life because the Message she brings IS LIFE ITSELF!

I urge each whose eyes touch the words contained herein to take a moment and just simply listen. There is a Witness within each of us. Listen for the small, still voice, but do not be troubled when you hear the voice and it (oddly enough) sounds just like your own. Pray tell me, who else is in there with you? It is this voice that the Message of Lillie Pearl is all about -- it is a Message all about YOU!

Your day, the day when the fog begins to dissipate for you will be a day just as this one. Is NOW that day?

James  
September 2004



## I AM THOMAS, THE WITNESS

I am Thomas (Tommy). I am 51 years old and an only child. Lillie is my mother. She is the author of this book.

I suppose the reason my mom asked me to write this (aside from me being her favorite son, that is), is that she probably feels I have the best perspective of her life -- of both who she was before and during the ever-evolving, oftentimes difficult processes she endured to become who and what she is today. As one who has been with her at all times over the past 51 years, I will give my account of what I personally witnessed during the years discussed here.

I was with her prior to her decision to seek Spiritual Truth. I was also there at the precise moment her mission began. But even more importantly, I was there *during* her search, positioned to bear firsthand witness to the depth of her quest.

Yes, I am her son and I am biased -- very much so, as a matter of fact. But having admitted that, I tell you from the most objective standpoint I can that had God decided all those years ago *against* blessing me to be her son, and if by some other miracle I could still have known her as I have, she would make my heart smile no less broadly. I would still be in tremendous awe of her. But God did see fit to bless me with the privilege of being her son, and I was blessed to be there with her every step of the way in her mission to find His Truth.

In the years immediately following her journey's beginning, she first became a devotee of the teachings of a so-called "Full Gospel" church (that I will not name), since this was the religion that had been adopted and passed down through generations of our family. But after years of frustration with the politics inherent in the

church's doctrinal tenets, and because of her confusion over seemingly conflicting facts throughout the Bible itself, she began to ask questions. These questions included:

Since anything political is by nature conflictive, how can politics and the pursuit of real Spiritual Truth co-exist? How is it that teachings on spiritual fact can be so different between one religion and another? Isn't there ultimately but one Truth? How is it that concepts taught as biblical fact by one religion can be so easily disputed by another by simply presenting an alternative "fact" from elsewhere in the same book? Wasn't the passing down of the Bible through the centuries intended to give humanity an escape from such confusion? Doesn't confusion itself conflict with the peace promised by God through his Word?

And so it went. My mother decided to begin trusting only in the One she knew could provide real answers.

Looking back now, I can't count the times I saw her fast for seven, fourteen, and twenty-one days at a time; she even fasted for 40 days a couple of times. She drank only water for sustenance while locking herself away in her bedroom, all the while praying and studying the Bible and crying and begging God for guidance. She wanted understanding of the real Truth.

In short order, her search became an overpowering obsession. She intended to find the Truth and to understand every word written in her King James Bible. She was determined to find out what is meant by the Bible's every word, just exactly who and what God is, and what was mankind's relationship to God and His universe. *She'd embarked on a journey that would exact unfathomable tolls. I can tell you. I was there!*

Her search included hundreds and thousands of hours in prayer, fasting, Bible study, note-taking, historical comparisons, word definitions, and comparisons between alternative biblical publications, religions, and religious theologies. On and on, it's all she did for what now seems to me a lifetime.



Interestingly, I've also been one of her strongest critics along the way. After all, I'd also been immersed in the teachings of the "church" all my life, just as my mother and grandmother had. For my own part, I'd been taken to church and brought to revivals by my grandmother while still only a child. As a child I even knew some of the names of the "big name preachers."

Later, during the years of my mother's initial (independent) acquaintance with God, she began speaking what seemed to be totally foreign ideologies. Because of the belief systems I'd adopted on my own by then, I, along with others that knew her, was quite frankly certain that she'd lost her mind. Based on what we all knew of God and spirituality in general, the things she now promoted as spiritual Truths were just flat out wrong. Her statements were heretical; blasphemous, even. And being her son, I had no problem in telling her so. I had my own opinions about things and so did others that I was close to, others that I was certain actually *knew* God's Truth.

One of these other individuals who strongly questioned my mother's now-new message was my dear departed grandmother. Her name was Nola, but I called her "Mama Charles." She had studied the Bible, prayed, and preached the church's doctrine for most of her adult life, though not nearly with the intensity of my Mom. Mama Charles had begun her own religious journey long before I was even born. Wow! You just had to be there for some of the discussions between my mother and grandma concerning some of my mother's "new revelations."

Suffice to say, my grandmother was quite the pistol in her own right. Once again, you just had to be there for some of the discussions between her and my mother about the new revelations concerning the Scriptures that my mom had discovered. But as the years went by, their "discussions" began taking on quieter (calmer) tones. In the last few years before her passing, it became obvious to me (and others that best knew them both) that my beloved Mama Charles, the one who most logically already

seemed to know the Truth, was coming into full accord with these new revelations that my mother had been espousing.

I had also borne witness over my lifetime to my grandmother's dedication to God, prayer, and the study of her Bible, and I had figured that if anyone *should or would* know the Truth, it would definitely be my grandmother. So to be honest, it was only once I'd begun seeing the dramatic changes in my grandmother's own interpretations of the Bible that even I, Lillie's only son, first began paying any real attention to her! In fact, though I'd been both *observing* and *listening* to my mother throughout my life, it has only been about the past ten years or so that I began to actually *see* and *hear* (some of) her Spiritual Messages.

Looking back now, I suppose I really lived up to my name (Thomas) during those years. One of the disciples of Christ, Thomas was said to be a skeptic when he first heard about the newly resurrected Body of Christ. He was convinced that it was really and truly the resurrected body of Jesus only after he was able to both *see* and *touch* the nail prints and scars in Jesus' hands and side. Like me, Thomas was not willing to simply accept the words of the other disciples who had already seen the resurrected Jesus and told Thomas about it. Even though in my case the witness of the resurrected Jesus was coming from my own mother, *I, like Thomas, needed to see, touch, and experience for myself the undeniable proof.*

I'll tell you something. If you don't get anything else from what I've written here about my mother, the author of this book, know this: *She did get what she has directly from the Source. I am her witness. I was there. I saw the price she paid with my own eyes.*

For those earnestly looking for the Truth, you'll find that each bit of information disseminated in this book agrees in perfect harmony with every chapter, verse, point, parable, and word in the Bible, from cover to cover. There are no political agendas herein. No conflicts with the Doctrine of God will be found.

Humanity has, in fact, become grossly steeped in false religious doctrines, as God said it would. For those looking for arguments, there are plenty to be made -- just none that are plausible -- because Truth is inarguable.

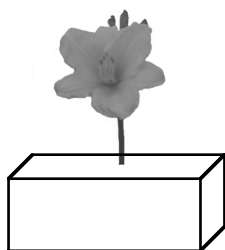
The only thing further I'll add is what I know my mother would say to you herself: that while she was the one chosen and blessed by God and given authority to pen this book, *The Book of Lillie* is actually authored by God Himself. For this reason I say to you that this book is the final testament of the Holy Bible; it is a testament whose sole purpose is to finally define and clarify man's position in God's universe. The Book of Lillie encapsulates and makes plain the context of the whole Bible, both the Old Testament and New Testament. The Book of Lillie provides understanding of the wisdom and grace of Truth.

I am Thomas, a witness to this body of new revelations penned by the hand of my mother, Lillie. I have both *seen and experienced the evidence of its Truth*. Therefore I give forth this witness.

I wish you all the great blessings and peace that belong to you in accordance with the Word of Truth.

Tommy  
September 2004

*If an individual does not know where he is going,  
then how will he know when he gets there?*



## Chapter 1

### **THE PIONEER**

The word “pioneer” means *to open* or prepare a path for others to follow; *to originate or take part in the development of a thing*.

My job as a *pioneer* is to *open* the eyes of understanding of those who will follow or come behind or after me on the pathway of Spiritual Awakening. I have *no new words* to offer anyone, but *new revelations* to offer everyone who will first believe; second, receive; and third, conceive. Every person who will believe, receive, and conceive (or become pregnant with) these True Oracles of God will experience an even greater revelation than he or she experienced in the reading of the first and second Covenants in the Holy Scriptures. This is because all who follow the pathway of the pathfinder and way-maker are able to see their way more clearly than the original pioneer. The brush, trees, and debris that the original pioneer had to deal with will no longer be obscuring, blocking, and thereby hindering the *way*. This, of course, is what a pioneer does: he makes the way clear and safe for those who come after him.

All previous Spirit-inspired writings and teachings have made the path much less cumbersome for the followers than it was for the original recipients of the writings. Since the beginning of the art and method of communication by way of the written word, there have never been any *new words*. Every word that shall ever be spoken has already been spoken. However, only a minute part of the original *spoken Word* has ever been written. As new revelations of the original spoken Word are given to those who are so inspired, they write -- and thereby open and make the way clear for those who will believe, receive, and conceive of the *new revelations*. There is not now, nor will there ever be anything

new, except new revelations of That Which Already Is and has been since creation of form began.

A great example of this is the Holy Bible. Holy people wrote that which they were inspired by the Holy Spirit to write. They received new revelation on that which already was; not new words, but *new revelations*.

That which *was*, *is*, and *shall be*. The new revelations today of that which *was* are but a *new awareness* of that which *is*, and a new beginning of that which *shall be*. The reader, believer, receiver, and conceiver of these revealed Living Oracles of Truth will experience yet another new and greater revelation of Spiritual Truth. Again, *not new words, but new revelations!*

This writing is intended to inspire, encourage, and help all who will dare to be courageous enough to step out of the past and into the present -- which is also the future! These writings will open the Books that have heretofore been sealed concerning God, Man (Soul), and creation. All that is hidden shall be made known to the one whose heart is sufficiently prepared to receive the Truth about the Truth.

The hidden mysteries of the past are now uncovered and made known by this writer. That which has been covered or cloaked by a veil of flesh -- and hard to be understood -- is now being made known to the *true believer*. The alphabet from A to Z (alpha to omega, from beginning to end) holds within itself every word ever spoken. Therefore there are no *new* words -- only *new revelations!*

There are twelve generations of revelation in every seed (word) of Truth, each greater than the other. These are the twelve foundations that are the building blocks that are used to build the Spiritual House from start to finish. Six of these foundations are experienced in the earthly realm, and six are known in the heavenly (or spiritual) realm of Understanding. At the moment the Soul (Man, which is a Seed or Word) is quickened and

germination (new life) of the Seed begins, ever-so-slight movement also begins. This is the beginning of the Soul's conscious awareness of its journey while it is housed in physical form. Heretofore its journey has been in a state of unawareness - - unconscious of Self.

This new experience called Awakening or Self-Awareness is a *process*. From the moment the Inner Light (or Enlightenment) begins, the first foundation is laid. It is called repentance. There is no way one can repent until the Inner Light has been experienced and the *revelation of the need to repent* is realized or made real to the Soul. Repentance means *to turn around and travel in another direction!*

From this point on, until twelve levels of revelation of the Self-same Word (Jesus) are known or realized, constant change is taking place within the heart, mind and soul of the individual. Until the very last foundation is laid by revelation (or experienced), and the harvest of the twelfth and last son of Jacob is in the barn, there can be no work of Perfection done by the worker. These twelve foundations are also represented in the twelve prophets and apostles of Christ.

Man (Soul) is the co-worker with Light (God, or Spirit). Light provides the Spirit and matter (which are the building materials or Substance), and man provides the form or blueprint. Man is the carpenter or architect of the building. By the words of his mouth he uses Life, Light, Spirit, and Truth as the building materials to build the *Spiritual House* of the Soul, just as he built his physical house in the womb of his mother.

The Seed (Word) holds within it the blueprint and form of the House. Man was called or given the name *Soul* before he was called *Man*. Man *is* a Soul. The Soul (Word) was made flesh in the form of a Man. Soul (or Man) is therefore the *co-owner* of the House! This is an Eternal House made with immortal Substance, and it abides forever. This House is built without hands. It is built

with the materials of Eternal Substance. The site of the building is also the site of the creation of the material from which it is built. No external work or creations are ever used in the building of this Eternal House.

One needs only to *realize* how many foundations he or she has laid in order to *know* how many remain to be laid. Each foundation (revelation) carries with it a specific order and process. Each revelation brings with it more Knowledge (building material), and with it comes the Wisdom to rightly use it in the building process. Until the last Living Stone (Word) is laid, the walls, doors, roof, and inner furnishings cannot be put into place.

Seedtime and harvest (sowing and reaping) ends for the Soul in the form of Man when the last stone is laid in the last foundation. No more studying and revelations are needed because *perfect knowing* will be forever established as full illumination of all Truth is experienced. This is the destiny of every Soul (Man) seed! A fully mature seed is a fruit-producing tree -- whose seed (Knowledge) is in itself.

Each time a new revelation is received on a past revelation, another of the twelve foundations is set into place. Each is laid upon the other -- precept upon precept, line upon line, truth upon truth -- making a *solid rock foundation*, unmovable and eternal in the Heavenly (or Spiritually-Awakened) state of Consciousness.

After this foundational work is finished, the rest of the work of the building process is accomplished in fullness of Light (Understanding). This City (House, Temple, or Building) will have no need for the moon or the sun (the first and second Covenants), but It will be a Light unto Itself, eternal in the heavens. This Holy Temple of God is the fullness of both the first and second Covenants. The brilliance of this *three-in-one Light* is awesome!



Every Soul (Man), whether conscious or unconscious of this truth, has within itself the inner ability, design, and potential to reach its ultimate, perfect Self-expression in and through form. The physical body is created by using the physics of Light and matter that is held within every atom in the universes. If this truth could be known by someone whose heart was not pure (but it cannot be), then that person could not attain eternal life.

By his own carnal, natural mind, Man has sought hard and long to find the *way* to operate in or harness this Substance and use It for selfish reasons. He has had a small amount of success in doing this. There have been those who have seen glimpses of this Truth, but only to a very limited degree. Einstein and others have had these glimpses, only for the knowledge they gained of this science to be lost at their demise.

The Creative Substance can be and is constantly misappropriated through ignorance of Its presence or use. The misuse of It only produces temporary benefit, and almost always a painful experience of some kind. One using this Creative Substance while operating in an unenlightened state of mind is not conscious at all of *what* he has done or *how* he did it! His creations -- whatever they may be -- soon pass or fade away. He has no conscious memory of his recorded creation because he was not consciously aware of the creation when he created it.

All creations of the perfect, fully-enlightened, Conscious Mind are done in a consciously aware state. The work is done in the inner regions of *Jerusalem* (the Holy Sanctuary or the City called Zion), while temporary creations are formed in the outer regions. The temporary, earthly, tangible, and mortal creations can be and are formed by *both* the Consciously Enlightened and the unconscious or unenlightened. The difference is that the Consciously Enlightened person knows *what* he is creating and *gives it true purpose*, while the unconscious, unenlightened person knows *not* what he is creating and therefore *cannot* give it meaningful purpose!

Creation without purpose is like trying to add nothing to nothing and get something! This is what mankind in his unenlightened state has done and will continue to do until the *day* dawns. Then he will realize for the first time that with all of his efforts and all of his trying to achieve, whatever he desired has failed. *Even when he thinks himself and actually appears to have achieved something, he really still has nothing!*

Here at man's extremity -- reaching as far *out of himself* as his mind and effort can take him -- he suddenly realizes that he is really still at the beginning; he has been nowhere and is going nowhere. *If an individual doesn't know where he is going, then he won't know when he gets there!*

This new awareness, be it ever so small, is quite enough to *lay the first foundation*. After this, it is simply a matter of the intensity of the desire to finish building the House. As to how long and arduous the task or journey will be, this is really up to the builder. The material for the building is always available and can be gathered for use at the building site any time the architect is desirous or ready to continue the process.

There must at all times be enough movement (Life) to keep the first foundation in place, or else one must do the first work over! *May every Soul repent (turn around), lay the first foundation, and go onward to perfection, laying the other eleven foundations along the way in order to complete the journey into the Light.*

Jesus called the *eleven* disciples to him and gave them their charge, sending them out to work the work he had started. He instructed each to build upon His foundation. Paul laid *his* foundation upon the one Jesus laid and gave instructions to be careful (thoughtful) how you build upon the one that he, Paul, had laid.

There are twelve *disciplines* (disciples) in every Prophet. Each discipline or disciple is a foundation for the eternal Building that is our spiritual House -- New Jerusalem.

There are twelve hours in a day. The day begins and ends at the sixth hour (Man's number). On the spiritual calendar, the number of days and nights that were determined for the completion of all earthly creations was six days and nights.

Spiritual Awakening begins at dawn -- the sixth hour -- and is accomplished in a full *day*. It starts at the sixth hour and ends at the *same* sixth hour. All men should work while it is *day*, while the fire or desire is alive; night cometh when no man can work.

Without adding new kindling on the fire (worship and giving of thanks), frequently the fire will go out. If the light or fire that came to initiate repentance (laying the first foundation) goes out because the builder (the seeker) loses desire or interest, then night or darkness comes once again to cover the mind and consciousness of the individual. Then there will be a long *night* ahead before the day dawns again.

It is better that one *never lay the first foundation* than to experience the conscious need and desire to turn around (repent) and afterward deny, resist, or do nothing to keep alive the fire or desire for Spiritual Awakening.

There are twelve hours in a day, but there are also twelve hours in a night. When man attempts to operate and run his life in a state of darkness (ignorant to his true Nature), he will never, ever find true peace and fulfillment. The Spirit of Awakening, the Life-giving Light of Truth, has appeared to every Man (Soul). Many start, but few continue on to reach perfection, or perfect Knowledge -- wherein they are fully, Consciously Awake.

Full, Conscious Illumination is the destiny of every Soul called Man. Each Soul or individual expression of Light is given the will to choose when, how, and where it will again awaken to a fully Conscious state. At some point, each Soul will choose to awaken and will do whatever is necessary to do so.

Each time a Soul disconnects with its present body (dies) while in an unenlightened state, it simply immerses itself on some level of consciousness with the *One Light*. This is always by choice. At some point, however, this single unit of expression of the Light will once again create for itself a body with which to express itself in form. This process will continue until the single unit of expression (Soul -- as Man in a flesh body) has perfected its creation (the physical body) and is able to ascend back to its original Perfect State. Then it will once and for all be completely preserved -- Spirit, Soul, Mind and Body -- and enter into the One Whole Perfect Light, which is Full Cosmic Consciousness.

In this state, Soul (Spirit) now has a tangible Body of Substance, and it is perfect and equal to the One Whole. It has now made a complete circle. It has descended from Spirit (where it was without form) into the earth realm, where it took on a form of flesh -- after which it ascended back into the Spiritual realm where it began its journey.

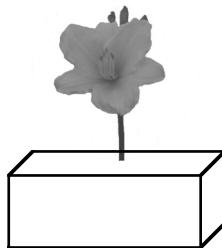
It left the Heavenly realm in the form of Light (which had no form) and returned to the Father's House in a Light Body -- with a form that pleases the Father. This Body of Light is made of the quickened, Living Word of the eternal God of Glory! This brilliant, Living Body of Light is given its form by the work of the Substance called Faith. *Is it any wonder that without Faith we cannot please God?*

For the Soul with its quickened, living, immortal Body there is now no more separation between the body and mind. It is no more on the wheel of birth and so-called death. It has now created and perfected a *full, whole Light Body* and ascended in *It* into the higher realms of vibratory frequency in the Cosmos.

I trust that while doing the work of a pioneer, I have by the instructions offered in these writings stirred your heart sufficiently to complete your Soul's journey. While I have cut a clear path for all to follow, *each must make the journey for himself*. My true heart's desire is that you may have a prosperous and joyous trip!



***I pray that these words will find a resting place within  
each reader's heart, bringing with them the Peace of Knowledge,  
the Joy of Wisdom, and the Glory of Understanding.***



## Chapter 2

### **ABOUT LILLIE, THE AUTHOR**

I was born on a farm in 1933. My family's life was very simple; nothing much ever happened of any great significance. We worked hard six days a week, going to church on Sunday mornings and evenings and on Wednesday nights. The order of the day was, *"Don't expect much and don't get much."*

I had two older brothers -- the oldest named David, and the younger, Jesse. When I was about four years old, my parents separated and divorced. My two brothers and I were packed up and promptly taken to the home of my grandparents. They were deeply religious, moral, legalistic, and hard-working people. Week in and week out, it was their duty to open and close the doors of the little country church we attended. My grandfather took this responsibility seriously. If there had been a key to the door of the church, he would have been the one to carry it. We were sure to be the first to arrive and the last to leave at every scheduled service.

The doctrines of the church were legalistic and not of a *spiritual* nature. We were raised in the church's strict moral structure and teachings. Almost everything in life -- except going to church -- was considered sinful.

We lived a hard-working farm life in a rural community. Our life was very meager, and we caught, killed, or grew everything we ate. But we never went hungry and we always had a roof over our head. Only three years separated my two brothers and me, and we more or less raised each other until, one by one, we left home.

I married at a very young age, but my marriage didn't last very long. It soon seemed that my whole life had been one disappointment after another. But by age 19 there was one bright

spot in my life. This was my wonderful son that I named Thomas even before he was born; he was and is to this day the *joy of my life*.

I called him Tommy and he was the center of my life in what was an otherwise sorry existence. Nothing significant ever seemed to last very long for me, although I tried many things. Every relationship I developed would turn sour, and with each one I was left more and more exhausted and disappointed. Then in 1972 things began to change when a second bright spot entered my life. I married my longtime friend Edison. He was, and remains to this day, one of the most gentle, loving, and caring persons I have ever had the privilege of knowing. Everyone, including me, lovingly called him Daddy.

Soon after Daddy and I were married, one day due to Daddy's business affairs we had occasion to attend a church service. It was one of the few times I had set foot in a church since childhood, other than attending a periodic funeral. To my utter surprise when we arrived at the church service, I discovered that it was the exact same type of church I had attended as a child. The memories of the harsh, unforgiving, and legalistic teachings of the church came flooding into my mind when we arrived and I saw the sign with the name of the church's denomination on it. I had asked Daddy before we went what kind of church it was and he had said he did not know. Had he been able to tell me, I probably would not have gone with him. This was because during my years of exposure to the church I never felt I could "live up to" the church's expectations. The denomination's teachings always left me with a load of guilt and condemnation.

I do not remember one single word the pastor said during his sermon. I don't really know if I even heard it. Suddenly I had an encounter with God that words cannot describe. It was quite unexpected and I was not consciously looking for it. The encounter was with an awesome Presence of Love never before known by me. I instantly knew *Who* it was that I was experiencing. No one had to tell me *Who* or *What* I had met.

This awesome Love made me know that I did not need to change



a thing; I was loved exactly the way I was. I did not need to get any smarter, more moral, or change anything about myself for this Love to embrace me.

My encounter with the ecstasy of Love was a continuation of the change that had begun when Daddy and I were married. From one moment to the next, my life took on a whole new meaning and direction that I could have never consciously imagined.

This experience with true and real Love immediately created in me an all-consuming obsession for *Truth*, and the truth *concerning* Truth. Prior to this encounter, I was not aware that to know Truth was to know *God and Self*. What I now knew was that there was an infinite sea of Love and I was swimming in it. I determined at that instant that no matter what the cost, I would know more of this God (Love) that I had encountered. Of course, I had no idea what this decision would require of me, nor did I know what it would ultimately yield.

My meeting with Love contradicted everything I had ever experienced in my earlier church teachings. I had never been told that *God loved me* -- only how disappointed He was with me. The things that I had heard *about* God never gave me any desire to pursue anything concerning God -- so I had not done so. But now, knowing instead that God loved me just the way I was, it created within me a burning desire to pursue and know more of what I had experienced. It was not "God" that I wanted to pursue, in the sense that I understood God, because my understanding of God was that I should fear Him. But I simply had to have and know this exquisite Presence of this awesome Love in a more understandable way.

As time passed I found myself spending more and more time each day and night seeking and desiring to have an understanding of what was going on inside of me. I started out merely *reading* the Bible, but I soon realized that I must *study* the Scriptures. Each day, Daddy would leave early in the morning to go to work, and I

would usually be deep in study when he left. Most often I would still be in the same position, studying, when he returned in the evening. As soon as I would fix his dinner and get him settled, I would go right back to my studying. This routine soon became normal for me; it was as though there was nothing and no one in my life that held as great an interest for me.

In my study and meditation I used only a notepad, a pen, a Strong's Bible Concordance, and my King James Version bible. This was because I did not know any other way to "look for God." I was simply determined to find God, whatever and wherever He was. I did this for more than seven years from the time I had my initial encounter until I found what I was seeking.

During my time of intense study I would often go for days without any sleep; I simply would not get sleepy. Also, early on in my search I became aware of the benefits of fasting. I enjoyed many, many 7, 14, and 21-day fasts, and also two 40-day fasts during these seven years. These fasts were almost always water-only fasts, and I also did one seven-day fast without even consuming any water. I just did not know any other way to find what I was seeking. The questions inside of me had to be answered, and I knew no one to go to for answers and no other way, means, or place to look. So I just kept on in my search.

I knew that I *must find* satisfaction inside of myself, or I was totally prepared to starve, if need be, to *know* more of this *God Love* that I had tasted. Nothing else -- and I do mean nothing -- would do.

During this time I had very little contact with the outside world. On most days, I would see my son as he came in and went out of the house. He was single and busy about his own life. Of course, I would also spend time with Daddy every day. He was always completely supportive and loving throughout my entire search. Most of my outside-the-house encounters were with the church we attended.

Shortly after the time of my initial encounter with this Love Presence, one day I suddenly knew that I was called to be a minister. Imagine my surprise! As time passed, the Spirit of God continued to impress upon my heart and mind that I was indeed called to be a minister. I found great excitement and agreement within me toward this high calling.

I innocently assumed I would follow in the footsteps of my pastor and would need to receive professional religious training in order to receive ordination by the denomination to which our church belonged. I couldn't have been more wrong; God had a different plan for me.

When I communicated with representatives of the denomination, they let me know in no uncertain terms that I would never be ordained by them. *I was a divorced woman, and this was against their doctrine!* I then considered attending a different type of Bible School, still thinking I needed some kind of official credentials in order to be a "real minister." So I filled out an application for Bible School. But as I was driving to mail out the application, I asked God this question: "Is this really what You want me to do?" He responded, "Sure, if *you* want to be the one doing the preaching." I did not understand, so my reply was, "I know nothing about how to be a minister." The Spirit of God then said to me, "*I am the teacher and I need no man to teach Me -- and I will teach you!*"

That stopped me in my tracks. Needless to say, my idea of my need for training by any organized religion immediately dissolved. I did not ever want to be *just another preacher* and I said so at the time. There were too many of those already. I wanted only the Word of God in my mouth, and *not what man said* was God's Word. I did not want to be a preacher called of God, *but trained and sent by man and looking to man for a paycheck*, as I had by now learned was most often the case.

So what did I do? I continued my search for Truth. Day after day, month after month, and year after year I prayed, fasted, and studied the Scriptures in my feverish search for Truth.

More than seven years passed in this manner from the time of my initial encounter with Love. Day and night, my life was totally consumed in giving constant attention to my pursuit of Truth. Any time I was not actually engaged in my studies I was *thinking about* what I had been studying. As I continued my search of the Holy Scriptures my desire for Truth only intensified. My need to *know* was constant and persistent.

I do not recall the exact date, but the first time I heard the audible voice of God was in late 1973. It woke me out of sleep at 3:00 o'clock in the morning. The voice was very masculine and so loud and awesome that it shook my very bones! It sounded as though it filled the entire universe. It said, **“Ephesians 1:17.”** That was all it said -- nothing more!

I quickly jumped out of bed and ran to the kitchen with my Bible. I opened the Bible to Ephesians 1:17 and I read: ***“That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him.”*** I was absolutely in awe! I did not understand what this meant for me or to me. I read the entire book of Ephesians every day for many months that followed and memorized most of it.

The next time I heard this audible voice of thunder was some months later. Once again I was awakened at 3:00 o'clock in the morning. This time there was only one word spoken, and once again it sounded as if it literally filled the entire universe. The word I heard was my name: **“Lillie!”** I immediately responded with, ***“Here am I!”*** It was only after I regained my composure that I realized what had happened and I wondered to myself why I had responded as I had.

As the years passed, I often reflected on these two experiences and on occasion shared them with a few people close to me, but I still did not know the significance of these two visitations.

Later during the mid 1970s there came a time when I was at a point where I did not know what was going on inside of me and

I felt as though I needed someone to help me. One day I was crying out very intensely and I said to the Spirit, “Why don’t you send someone to help me? Why don’t you tell my pastor to help me? No one even knows I am a minister and I don’t know anyone to go to for help!”

In the midst of my strong cryings the Spirit of the Lord spoke to me very assertively and this is what It said: ***“If I send someone to help you, they will get the credit for what I am going to do through the ministry that I have called you to. I will share my Glory with no man! For when I do what I am going to do, all people will know that it was Me that did it!”***

From that day until this day, almost thirty years later, I have never again asked the Father to send anyone to help me. He has *always* been my ever-present help. Many times over the years I have pondered these special and memorable visitations, along with many other visitations that followed. But I did not really connect each as a piece of a puzzle until I began to write this book.

The Spirit continued to speak to me often, and at times unexpectedly, concerning subjects that were puzzling and surprising, though not always in an audible fashion. On January 4<sup>th</sup>, 1980, while flying over thirty-thousand feet in the air traveling from California to Louisiana, accompanied by my husband and a friend, once again the Spirit of God spoke to me. It said, **“Write down what I say.”** So I did.

I was told that there was about to be a great change in my life, though the Spirit did not give any detail of what kind of change or how it would come about. I had no understanding of the nature or magnitude of what was to occur. The following is what I wrote:

***“The things that are written were and are written, not because of the man they were written about, but they were written so that you may know the greatness of your God.***

***“The acts and the people involved in these written things were manifest that I may be revealed to My people. It is not important to know the intricate things, but the intricate God that caused all the things.***

***“I created all things by my word, and the same word spoken is no less powerful now, by my servants, than when they were first written. For they were not just spoken -- when -- they were first written, but were re-revealed to the writer, for they were all spoken before the world was formed. Much more was spoken and much more will be revealed to you -- and you will write even as Paul and others have written the spoken as it was revealed -- for I have chosen you. You will begin to write many things that will amaze you; and as you write them, you will speak them, and I will cause them to come to pass, and others will begin to speak the things you write and they will happen. For they are my words -- not new words -- but new revelations!”***

In March of the same year, the promised and expected change arrived with much gusto. One day I was attending a meeting and as I opened my mouth to speak, suddenly it seemed as though I began to operate on automatic! I started prophesying, and the next thing I knew I was flat on the floor. The only words coming out of my mouth were, “Love, love, love.” The words even had a tune with them. It was a *Song of Love*, with only one word sung over and over and over, and it would continue to come out of my mouth for several days afterward.

Not only had I suddenly found the Door that I had so desperately sought, but it had opened and I was now swimming in a vast ocean of *Love and Truth*.

My days and nights were now filled with the continual, *audible* voice of Spirit. Instead of me searching the written Scriptures as I had done for more than seven years, I was constantly bathed in Living Truth as I received Revelation Knowledge on all I had learned from the written word. *It was now alive!* I began to realize that even though previously I could quote the Scriptures

from front to back, I truly had no understanding of the *spiritual meaning* of any of them. The difference before and after is similar to the difference in having a dead seed or a living tree! Everything that I had understood the Scriptures to mean before was totally and completely in error. I really had received a New Revelation! The Word of God was now *alive in me*.

During this time of my spiritual metamorphosis, I discovered that I had to unlearn everything -- and I do mean everything -- that I had learned from others during my entire life, as well as what I had received from my own studies of biblical writings. Not one single word of the Holy Bible had been correctly interpreted for me or by me. Even the things that seemed to have been somewhat correct I now knew to be totally out of context.

For most of two and one-half years following my Divine Visitation and the impartation of the Love Song to me, I was *caught up in the Spirit*. This experience is called by some "God Consciousness," or "God Realization." Now as I sat in my recliner or laid in my bed I was engaged in an *audible conversation* with God (Spirit) day and night. I still slept very little and I went for days where I did not sleep at all. The longest period of time I went without any sleep was eight days and nights.

During this time I was not instructed by any teacher in bodily form that was visible to me. I only heard the *audible voice of Spirit* as It set about to instruct me regarding the *Truth* that I had so feverishly sought after and intensely desired to know.

The intensity of the revelations was so great at times that I felt as though I could not contain any more. All of the *Truth* that flowed into my consciousness radically reordered my understanding of life. There were elements of what I received that I was not allowed to share with anyone -- not even those closest to me. I had consciously and diligently sought to find the door leading to the kingdom of God. I was not disappointed. Truly, the windows of heaven had flung open! The eyes of my understanding were and are now open wide, and I can say of a certainty, "*Now know I.*"

I thought it necessary to share this short description of myself so that you, the reader, could have a true picture of my life and perspective before and after my Spiritual Awakening. *There is not one thought, idea, or statement of fact contained in this book that I learned or received from any religious organization or doctrine.* All of the writings in this book came to me by Divine Revelation. They were written as the Spirit of God moved upon my consciousness, thereby giving Spiritual Understanding of the testaments and words of the prophets in times past. *These are not new words, but New Revelations.*

I know that this same Spirit is resident in each of you. I pray that you will invite *It* into your *inner home* -- into your Heart, Soul, Mind, and Spirit. You too will *not* be disappointed.

Fulfilling the prophetic word given to me more than 24 years ago, I am now released to commit in writing some of what I have experienced and come to know. Just as the apostle Paul and others wrote the epistles and other writings as the Holy Spirit moved upon them, I likewise offer these writings penned through my own hand.

This book comprises the third part of the three Covenants mentioned in the Bible. The first Covenant had no Life, nor could it give Life. The second Covenant provided mankind with a message of hope, and it promised that the third would come and fulfill the promise and hope contained in the first and second. This message that I am giving herein is the third part of the Trinity.

The body of knowledge contained in this book provides understanding of the knowledge that the first Covenant contained and that the second Covenant promised would come. This book of writing is the child conceived of the first two Covenants. The first Covenant is Faith as a seed (man, or word only); the second Covenant is Hope as the tree (woman, or Living Word, or the born again seed); and the third Covenant is Charity as the fruit (the child -- the Understanding of the Word -- this writing).



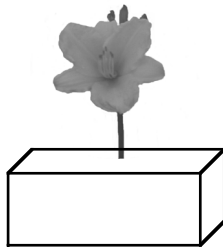
Charity is the child of the second generation that is conceived by the Holy Spirit, and she is the fruit of the *immaculate conception* by Faith and Hope. Faith is the Father. Hope is the Mother (or seen another way, the Son of Faith, or Christ -- the bridegroom). Charity is the Bride who is *in* the Bridegroom (as the fruit is *in* the tree) and she is the fullness of the father (seed) and mother (tree). The seed, tree, and fruit are Faith, Hope, and Charity, which bring Peace, Love, and Joy.

Every sincere and honest Truth seeker who reads the writings contained in this body of knowledge will not only read and learn the written words, but *will also experience them* like he or she has never experienced the written Word before!

My prayer for you is that you will receive the Seed of Faith (Truth) and nurture it until the Son (Christ) is fully formed in you. I pray that you will give birth to the Bride whose name is Charity, *who is the greatest of them all!*

The Bride (Charity) is the Holy City of God called Zion. She is your eternal, immortal Home. Your destiny in Spirit is full, Cosmic Illumination in your Conscious Mind.

***The True Jew is one who is circumcised in the heart  
by the Spirit of God. The True Jew is given the  
Oracles of God by the Spirit of Revelation!***



## Chapter 3

### **THE ORACLES OF GOD:** **WHAT ARE THEY?**

Many readers may have heard or read the phrase “Oracles of God” but do not know what an *oracle* actually is. The subtitle of this book states that this book contains the Oracles of God. For those of you who do not know what this means, I would like to take this opportunity to explain to you what the Oracles are and how they work.

Webster’s Dictionary defines an oracle as: “a person through whom a deity is believed to speak; a shrine in which a deity reveals hidden knowledge; or the divine purpose through such a person.” Strong’s Concordance defines an oracle as an “inner sanctuary; referring to the Most Holy Place; the back room of a shrine temple for oracle pronouncement.”

These two definitions do not fully or accurately describe the Oracles of God. An *oracle* is an absolute Truth. The Oracles are the pure Words of Life that originate in the heart of Love. They are the seeds of Knowledge whose source is the fruit that the Tree of Life produces out of Herself. The Tree of Life is the source of the Wisdom of God and is the Love of Spirit. It is also the Spirit of Love. The Spirit and the Love of God are one -- and they are the “Wisdom that is from above.”

Do not confuse this Wisdom with man’s wisdom. By his natural, carnal mind, man has no ability to know this Knowledge of Wisdom that is called the Oracles of God. The Oracles of God are not a *learned knowledge*, but rather all Oracles of God are *revealed* by the Spirit of God (also called the Spirit of Truth). They come to the recipient by a definite and Sovereign act of Spirit.

As I have already stated, these Oracles are not *learned* by the recipient, but they are imparted by Divine Revelation. *They are known through the experiencing of them.* The Oracles are pure and gentle, bring with them peace and clarity, and are full of mercy. They are easy to be entreated (received). Their recipient never questions their Source or their absolute, unadulterated Truth. The Oracles of God are of no private interpretation. They are always without partiality and hypocrisy.

The Oracles of God are living, Divine Beings manifesting themselves as “Words.” No man can *will* these Divine Revelations of Truth to come to him simply by an act of his own will or for any selfish reason. It is the Holy Spirit of God Who chooses the vessel through which this Divine Holy Water will flow. No part of this experience is in any way an act of man; the visitation comes strictly at the bidding of the Holy Spirit of God. The Oracles of God can be believed or disbelieved like everything else. All of the Holy Scriptures have been given by these Divine, Living Revelations of Truth.

The Oracles contained in the Holy Scriptures were given at the end of one dispensation of time and at the beginning of another. These dispensations overlap so that there is no seam in the garment -- no division or separation in the House (Temple) of God.

We have come to know the Holy Scriptures as the Old Testament and New Testament. Both came at a time when a definite change was emerging in Man’s consciousness. We can look at it this way: if you have two streams of water meeting at one point to merge into each other to form one stream, there is no *seam* or division at the meeting place. It looks something like the letter “Y.” The stream on the left and the one on the right meet in the middle to make one body of water (Knowledge).

The Old Testament -- which was the first Covenant or Body of Knowledge -- was given to instruct mankind because of his need to recognize himself as superior to the *other* “beasts of the field,”

and because of his need to change his beastly ways. Before then there was no need for the written Word. Through this written Covenant mankind began to acquire a sense of morality by following the instructions laid down in its moral Law. By his carnal understanding of this Law he learned what he believed to be “good” and “evil.” Through his fear of a distant Deity -- he did not know where or what this far-away Deity was -- he began his journey through the carnal Law. This Law was in force until the New Oracles came 2,000 years ago.

The coming of a New Testament was promised in the Old Testament. The New Testament was the fulfillment of the promise. Not only did the New Testament fulfill the promise given in the Old (or first) Oracles, but *it also promised yet another Covenant to come*. The New (or second) Testament is but *a new revelation of the first one* -- not new words, but *a higher level of understanding of the first Covenant*.

The Oracles contained in this book are, once again: *not new words, but new revelations* of both the Old (first) and the New (second) Testaments / Covenants. *This book contains the third and last Covenant that was promised to mankind by God more than 6,000 years ago*. There is no need and therefore no promise of another Covenant or another book of instructions beyond this Covenant.

Compared to the first two, this testament (witness) is small in its volume of words because the veil that obscured or hid the Truth in both the first and second testaments (witnesses) has been removed. This book of Oracles reveals plainly the destiny of every Soul called Man, and exactly how each Soul will arrive at the fullness of Cosmic Illumination. *Future writings by this author will offer a complete and comprehensive accounting of creation*.

There will be no need for any more or further written instructions *for the honest Truth seeker*. Anyone who will simply follow the teachings of this Book of Oracles will experience full God Consciousness at the appointed time.

These Living Oracles will cause a definite and marked difference upon and within the conscious mind of all who will receive them. The Oracles that are now given in this third Covenant (or third part of the Trinity -- the Three that are One) will have a much greater effect and impact on the lives of those who read them than did the first two parts of the everlasting Covenant. The writings in the first two Covenants were cloaked in parables, Jewish fables, riddles, allegories, and “wives tales” -- also called the veil of flesh. This third and last Revelation of the original Oracles is open and plain to the mind that is sufficiently evolved or enlightened concerning the Law of the Spirit of Life. The level of consciousness of *all* who read these Living Oracles with honest, true, and sincere hearts will dramatically change forever as these individuals’ Illumination of Truth increases and expands exponentially!

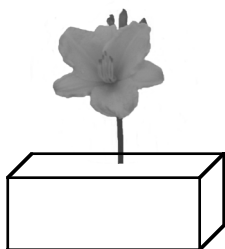
These Oracles will *not* be *learned* by the natural mind, but will be *experienced* as the sincere and holy Truth seeker partakes of them. These Holy, Living Oracles will literally be engraved or carved into the hearts and minds of those who are ready for them. This will be a Sovereign act of the Holy Spirit of God. No one can force this Divine Visitation by any foolish act or desire.

The Oracles of God are the Pure, Undiluted, Divine Words and Knowledge of God. I pray that each one who partakes of these Divine Truths will have a speedy and assertive visitation of Divine Spirit and then quickly begin to operate his or her life in accordance with *the Law of the Spirit of Life*.

These are the True and Living Oracles of God! By and through this Living Body of Knowledge all who believe and are ready for It will *simultaneously experience both God Realization and Self Realization* and enter into Cosmic Consciousness. ***Have a great and awesome experience!***



*There is no mission, no search that is more rewarding,  
no thing to be desired -- no thing to discover -- that  
is more valuable than finding “the Pearl of Great Price.”*





## Chapter 4

### THE PEARL OF GREAT PRICE

To whom much is given, much shall be required. Since the descent of Soul (which is Man) into flesh form, Soul has had little or no *Self awareness*. Soon after its descent, the Soul lost its Self identity, and it has been in a state of what we will call “sleep” ever since.

There are many who think that Man *is* Spirit and *has* a Soul. This is incorrect. Man *is* a Soul and the Soul is *created by* (or made and formed by) Spirit. Man, or Soul, is a creation of Spirit. The Creator God had no beginning, but Soul *did have a beginning*. In fact, it had its beginning like all of the other myriads of created forms.

While Soul is expressing in the form of flesh (or matter), it has the ability to sleep -- to experience what we call death! It changes forms from time to time by going in and out of the form state. The veil of flesh which houses it gives the Soul this ability. The level of Soul's *conscious awareness of itself* expressing in form is always the issue. The form has very little to do with anything. The form serves to give an identity to the expression. It is always the degree of illumination and conscious awareness that tells the story.

Let me be clear here concerning Spirit and Matter. As will be explained throughout this book, forms of matter (flesh) are called by different names than the Spirit that is expressing in and through the forms. It is because of the assignment of various names to things that are in form and out of form that an understanding of *what Soul is* and *what it is not* has long since been lost in a sea of mass confusion. This confusion not only applies to the names given to Soul, which is called man, woman, male, female, father, son, daughter, etc., (and is also called *matter*), but also to everything that has been given a name, including *God*. The many

names are a source of mass confusion to the sleeping Soul. The many and various names that man assigns to everything in form do nothing but create more and more confusion.

I will give a simple example of this truth. I was brought up in the country in the 1930s. I was raised by my grandmother who had a very large yard in which she grew many flowers. Some of these flowers grew on vines. My grandfather built a *thing* for the vines to travel on so as not to have them running all over the ground. This *thing* would protect the flowers from being trampled on or spoiled by water when it would rain, so that they could be seen and enjoyed for a longer period of time.

I first heard this *thing* the vines traveled upon called a *trellis*. Sometime thereafter, I heard it (*the thing*) called an *arbor*. The difference in a trellis and an arbor was in size and form only, but the purpose of both was exactly the same.

Most recently I was in a conversation with a man who builds homes, and while discussing different aspects of the home he was building he mentioned that he intended to build a pergola on the backside of the house. Having never heard the word *pergola* before, I had absolutely no idea what he was talking about and certainly could not associate it with anything that I knew. Little did I know that all the while he was speaking of this *thing* (a pergola), he was speaking of something that I had been very familiar with from my childhood -- an arbor. Because he gave the thing *another name*, I knew not what he was speaking about. In other words, even though he was speaking the English language -- the only language I have ever known or spoken -- he was speaking to me at that time in an *unknown tongue*.

There are many dialects and different languages on planet Earth. Many people have no understanding of any language that is not their native tongue. Now, I have never researched how many more names a trellis, arbor, or pergola has in my own native language, but this much I do know: *regardless of what name it may be called, its purpose and function are one and the same.*

So it is with everything. All *things* are given and called by many names, but each *thing* has a *specific purpose*, and that purpose is established in its original design at the beginning of its existence in form. Giving a *thing* another name does not change its original design and purpose. Much knowledge, much learning, and the assigning of many different names to a *thing* only serves to generate more and more confusion, contention, strife, and anger in the minds of men. The fruit of Man's confusion is evident all across the globe.

There are countless religions and denominational doctrines today, and we can see their bewildering impact on the human race. We see different belief systems, each identifying their God by a different name and trying different tactics to appease *their* God. The truth is, though, that there is only *one* Source of Life and therefore only *one* God.

Does the name given or assigned to a *thing*, whatever the name or the *thing* may be -- even "God" -- change *what it is*? *No, it does not, because no, it cannot!* The thing which *is*, is not what it is because of the name or title it has been given. Rather, it is what it is *because of what it is*. It cannot be and *is not what it is not!* Its name or form has *nothing whatsoever* to do with *what it is*. Its name and form simply identify its purpose for expressing in form.

The Holy Bible is a conglomerate of words, names, and titles given to the same *things* over and over again. Perhaps you have noticed that many of the main characters in the Bible are given different names along the way. Abram's name was changed to Abraham; Sarai was changed to Sarah; Saul was changed to Paul; Man was changed to Soul; and the Word was changed to "flesh." The name "Word" was also called *God*. God alone knows all of the names by which It (God, or Spirit) is called or identified.

Another great example of names and their contribution to mass confusion is contained in the name given a *tree*. You *cut* the *tree* down and call it *wood*; you *saw* the *tree* that is now called wood into various shapes and sizes and call it *lumber*. We have

come to know lumber as 2 x 4's, 2 x 6's, 2 x 8's, beams, posts, etc. From here we call it doors, trim, molding, tables, chairs, desks, bedposts, doorposts, cabinets, etc. I think you get the message!

Now I ask you, did giving the tree these myriad of names change *what it was* in the beginning? No, it did not. What it *was* in the beginning is *what it is now*, and it is *what it shall be*! Changing its name, shape, size, purpose, or use does not change what it is!

I said all of this to ask you two questions: (1) Do you know *What* you are? and (2) Do you know *that* you are *What* you are?

When the character Moses asked, "Who am I?" the reply was, "You are the I Am." But giving oneself the name "I am" could mean that I am anything or all things, could it not? One could say, "I am," but then for the title to have any meaningful significance one would need to explain what the "I am" that "I am" -- *is*. The correct interpretation of the reply given to the question asked by the character Moses is this: "I am one with God, therefore *I Am God!*"

If you say "I am" sad, hot, cold, hungry, full, tired, awake, asleep or whatever, the "I am" that is having *all* of these different experiences is the same "I am." To say this same exact thing, but using a more simple and open way to say it is this: the name or title *God* means "*all things*." God is *all* things to *all* people. God *is all* and *in all*, and therefore to be one with God is to be one with *all things that be*!

The myriad of different names given to things is of no value whatsoever when you come to know and realize the things that are true and have a real Beingness. It is the knowing and understanding of that which is *real* -- compared to that which is fiction -- that ultimately makes a difference.

We see this in all the myriad of names given to a *tree*. These names are fictitious. Even the name *tree* itself is a fictitious name

because it *is* what it *was*, and it was and is *Light!* Before it was called a tree, Light was also called Life, Consciousness, Energy, Spirit, God, Word, and Seed. So we see that a thing that is called a tree was called and identified by at least eight other names before its identity became known as a tree. No wonder there is mass confusion on planet earth!

In order to derive beneficial Substance from this teaching, I used the name *tree* in our example or analogy, but this principle of Truth applies throughout all form.

God is Light.  
Light is Energy.  
Energy is Spirit.  
Spirit is Life.  
Life is Consciousness.

All of the above names are used to identify the same invisible Presence that is always everywhere present. We have assigned these six names to the same thing; now let us add three more names to the list:

God is Word.  
Word is Flesh.  
Flesh is Man.

Now let us add three more names:

Man is Soul.  
Soul is Form.  
Form is Matter.

All of the above-named things *were and are* the *one Light*. So we can see that we used twelve different names to describe *the one thing which is*, but we have not *changed* that which is. Simply giving it a name does not mean that it becomes something that it *is not!* Therefore we understand God to be the One Presence, and

we accept that the names assigned to this God Presence do not diminish the truth that God is, in fact, Light, Spirit, Energy, Life, and Consciousness.

All *things* that *be* had their beginning *at and in* the *Thing* that *was and is!* It *was* invisible Life Presence, and It *is* invisible Life Presence. It may be expressing Itself in a visible form or It may not be expressing in a visible form, however It -- the invisible Life Presence -- is everywhere present.

A form gives that which is invisible and intangible, visible and tangible substance. The tangible substance or form is but the visible form of the invisible Presence. But the form does not change *what It is*. Of itself, the form is nothing because it has no self-existence.

If all things that *be* are *real*, then they had to come from and out of a Source that is *real*. There is only *one* Source for all things that *be*. All things that *be* have their reality in the *thing that is real*. The *thing* that *is*, is *the thing that was* in the beginning. That which was in the beginning is *in* the now -- with the emphasis on the word "in." Within that *thing* which *is*, is where all things have their Beingness. No thing can *be* except it has its beingness *in* the thing which *be*, and therefore in that which is *real!* God, Light, Spirit, Life, and Consciousness is the *only* True Reality in existence. *In* Reality all things live, move, and have their being!

When a Man (Soul) finds that which has been lost for such a long time, he then can identify with the *thing* that is real, because he will have found the *Pearl of Great Price*, which is, in fact, his *own True Identity*. Self-Realization eliminates the need for the Soul to identify with all of its fictional names and enables it to identify only with its own Real and True Identity. It will then know that *it was*, *it is*, and *it shall be* Who and What it is! No amount of fictional drama or assignment of names can change *that which is* -- its True Identity. That which was *in* the beginning is *in* the now, and is *in* everything that *is and has beingness*.

The “It” we have mentioned is Light, Life, Spirit, Consciousness, and God. Within this Life Substance, all things had their beginning and now have their being. This living, vibrating Substance is everywhere present and is in all things, as all things. All things that *be*, whether in a form or without a form, have their being in this Living Substance, out of which all things were and are created. It is *in* all and It *is* all!

For one to imagine himself to have any existence apart from the very thing that he *is* would be ludicrous. Because Soul (Man) has lost or forgotten its True Identity, it has come to believe itself to be all manner of different fictional characters in the play of Life. Using wives’ tales, word pictures, allegories, and riddles in the Bible, the written Word has been provided to mankind in order to *help the Soul find Itself!* For *Itself* is the *thing that was lost*. Realization of Itself is lost through the loss of Identity.

The door to literally everything is the True Self Itself. The Self Itself is not some fictional character, but the Real Self is the door to, *and actually is, everything* -- for all things have their being *in* that which is real.

Soul has paid and continues to pay an astronomical price for its demands to remain ignorant. This is because the Soul that is ready to ascend out of ignorance by beginning the search for Itself will discover that the finding of this great treasure is well worth the price and effort spent in the search. But until the decision is made to begin the search, the price will continue to be exacted from every area of one’s life.

It should be understood that some inner peace and a measure of freedom is experienced while the Soul is engaged in the search. This freedom and peace will steadily increase as glimmers or flashes of *Light* bring Conscious Understanding to the seeker. This growing measure of peace and freedom most often fuels the desire in the Soul to continue its search for complete liberation. True and complete liberation (freedom) will only be experienced,

however, by one who has *actually found* that which had been (seemed to be) lost. *Perfect liberation* through *absolute Understanding* and *True Self Identity* will be experienced when Soul consciously reunites with Christ Mind or God Consciousness.

I sincerely encourage every Soul to *seek, ask, knock, pray, study and exercise self discipline* until it identifies with the still, small voice within. Follow the sound of this voice that is still. It does not change its position or move or wander around. It is also a very small voice. It is very faint and sometimes hard to hear amid all the clamor of all the imitators or voices of fiction. The more the Soul identifies with this still, small voice, the louder it will become and the easier it will be to follow and find it.

You see, this voice is like a little baby sheep that is lost in the forest, crying out. With the myriad of trees (obscuring your view), mixed together with the blowing winds (other voices), it is sometimes not easy for you (the Shepherd) to rightly decipher from what part of the forest the voice is coming. But the closer you get to where the voice is originating from (or where the Little One is), the louder and more distinct it will become.

Remember this: the voice of the Little One is “calling” for the Shepherd, hoping that he will hear and come to find it. Of course, the Shepherd is *searching for* and desires to be rejoined with the Little One. The Little One cannot go searching for the Shepherd. Only by *the sound of its voice* can it make contact with the Shepherd because it is yet entangled amid the brush and debris of the forest. Ignorance (the darkness of the night) has caused it to lose its way or direction.

The Shepherd must go to the Little One because the Little One *cannot* come to the Shepherd! Once the Good Shepherd *hears* the voice of the Little One that is lost, he will leave all the other voices (deceivers / decoys) behind to find the one whose cries he hears.



You need to know that as long as you follow the many voices that reside outside the *gate*, (and therefore have their existence outside of your pasture) you are seeking that which is not yours (not your Little One). If the voice is not originating from within *your* pasture then it is not *your* sheep (voice). One will find a thing *where it is!* This Little One that is lost will be found *in you* (your pasture). When you find it, you will discover to your amazement that the thing that you thought to be lost and spent eons looking to find was there within your pasture all the time. Though it was covered with all manner of brush and debris all around, obscuring your vision, it was *never* outside of *your* pasture; it was always safe, though alone and away from the rest of the herd!

You will also discover that the myriad of voices outside of yourself that you followed, believed in, and trusted while in search of your Little One's voice were all decoys that were cloaked in man's religions, false science, and philosophies. A decoy will never be able to direct you to the *real* Little One. Once you stop, *stand still* and tune into and *really listen* to the *still* voice, you will not only be able to hear clearly, but you will be able to discern the sure direction the sound (voice) is coming from. You will then be able to walk a *straight and direct path* that is ordered by the voice -- the Spirit within. You will experience no more walking in circles and ending up at dead ends. Once the exact direction and path have been solidly determined, then it is only a matter of following the direction that the path takes you, always keeping attuned to *the sound of the voice* that is leading you.

Once there is no more distance between *you* and *the voice*, the only work that is left to be done is to remove the branches, limbs, and all manner of debris (belief in false religions) that cover and obscure the Little One from your vision, making its rescue possible. To continue to follow organized religion will make the rescue impossible! Everyone must separate themselves from all other voices of authority and only follow the *One!*

Once you have clearly heard and followed the voice in the direction of its sound, *thereby closing the distance between you and the voice*; and once you have removed the debris (ignorance) sufficient to *see* the Little One that was lost -- then, and only then can you give certain *testimony and witness* to what you have both *heard* and *seen*. The journey for you is over and that which was lost is now found! You now *know* yourself as you really are! You no longer identify with fictional characters. Oh Man, know Thyself!

We can now identify by two names the covering and debris that you had to remove from your conscious mind in order to see and hear Truth. They earned their names by the nature of their expressions: they are *ignorance* and *deception*. The reason the first name is ignorance and the second name is deception is because deception is the *fruit* (consequence) of ignorance and *cannot* exist without it.

I am sure that by now you, the reader, have discovered that the Little Voice (that is ever so still, small, and faint) *is the Voice of the Soul Itself*. It has been entangled with all manner of debris, clouds, shadows, voices, temptations, and desires for imagined pleasures for a very long time. It has been *running away from its True Nature* while playing the game of fiction. It became deeply buried under the weight of carnality (ignorance), so much so that it could not *see* its way out. It became confused and filled with guilt and condemnation. It began to believe that its Master Shepherd was angry with it because it lost its way (its True Identity), fell in a hole, and got covered with life's debris.

The truth is that the Little Lamb got lost through no fault of its own and *is, in fact, innocent* of any wrongdoings! The Good Shepherd is so grateful to find the Little One that He would not hesitate to leave behind all of the other sheep (the other voices) in order to find the *One*!

The Little One is the hidden Soul or Man of the heart, and it is waiting for everyone who calls himself or herself a Good Shepherd

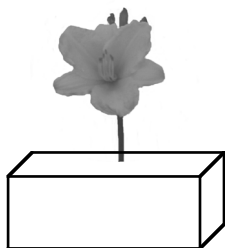
to seek, find, and rescue it. Listen until you hear the distinct sound of the still, small voice from within you. It does not move around from place to place. Remember, it cannot move around because it is caught in a trap and is in the hole of ignorance and deception.

Follow the *sound* of the voice to its source and you will *see* (behold) the *Lamb of God*! It will be the Self Itself. It will be the *real you* that you will find! No longer will you know yourself as an imitator or fictional character with a myriad of names to identify yourself.

Remember this as your true guide along the way: *you can be Yourself better than you could ever hope to be someone else*. Diligently look for and discover Yourself! Realize Who and What the Real You truly is and then consciously be that. *Demonstrate* the Real You in fullness of expression as the Self -- Itself.

There is no mission, no search that is more rewarding, no thing to be desired -- no thing to discover -- that is more valuable than finding “*the Pearl of Great Price*.”

*A thing can only be found --  
where it is!*



## Chapter 5

### **I FOUND IT! NOW WHAT?**

Now that we know what we have been looking for and have found its location, what can we do next that we may rescue (save) the Little One -- the Pearl of Great Price? In our last chapter we discovered not only what the Pearl of Great Price is, but we also discovered its location. Now the process of rescuing it is our next project.

We learned that this great prize is in a deep hole (a grave of flesh), covered with all manner of debris (ignorance). So all that is left to do now is to remove every tree, branch, rock or any other type of covering that it may be under. We must go about the removal of these obstructions in a very methodical and patient manner. We do not want to cause a landslide or debris slide that would fall into the hole and further injure *the Little One*.

It has taken literally eons of time to create all these many layers of ignorance and deception that we now have to remove in order to *see (behold) the True Lamb of God*. Discovering the still, small voice was our first step in the right direction. Learning to recognize and *follow* the leading of the sound of the voice was our next step -- learning to walk the straight path that ultimately led us to the place where there is no more looking for the Source of the voice or trying to hear the voice "from afar."

Now there is no more imagined distance between you and the voice that you have been following. *You* now realize that *you* are *both* the hearer of the voice and *you* are the voice that *you* hear! In other words, the message and the messenger are *one! The ear, the hearing, and that which is heard are all one*. These three are *one!*

Now comes the crescendo, when we shall *see* that which has been heard. Now we shall see our Savior. Now we shall see (behold) the Lamb of God in all of His brilliance and glory!

The question is not *what* needs to be done in order to experience this ultimate victory, when we shall reach into the deep, dark hole (well) where the Little One still is. Rather, the question is: *in what order* must the work of rescue be performed so that we may actually *behold and handle* that which up to this point we have only been able to hear, but have not seen or touched?

We have already discovered that this must be done very methodically and with great patience. We also need to know that this is a labor of great love, and that absolute devotion to completing the job must be a priority in our lives. We must be fully committed to finishing the duties of *Savior and Good Shepherd* in order to save that which was lost.

Hearing the voice only leads one to the location or work site. If one then tires or becomes discouraged because the work that is now before him is slow and arduous, then because of a lack of excitement, burning desire, and full commitment (*which is because he does not have a made-up-mind*), he will not be able to finish the job of rescuing and receiving the Little One. A fully made-up-mind is the key to absolute success in everything in life.

The well is deep! Also, much debris, carnality, many false religious beliefs, and all manner of perverted ideas are stacked very high, deep, and wide to block or cover the *mouth* of the well. Every bit of this must be removed before you will be able to *see* (understand) that which you have found and before your hands will be able to *hold and handle the prize*. But when you have successfully uncovered (made manifest) that which you have heard and found, and your eyes shall behold it, then you will be able to see Him *as He is* and you shall *be like Him!* Your true Identity shall once again be known to you, and you will *see and know* that *in the beginning God made Man in His own express likeness!* And so it is!

The only thing that has ever changed since the beginning is man's *conscious awareness* of this truth. When man *lost* his Identity, he also *lost* his Self-image and Self-awareness. He *lost* his *mind*!

Man has been asleep, deluded, mesmerized, bewitched, and deceived for so very long. Thanks be unto the Most High God, for that which was believed to be lost (but was asleep and buried *as though it had died*), has now been rescued (awakened) by and through the tedious excavation work of the Holy Spirit. This is the resurrection and the Life. This is also called the transformation (or metamorphic work of Spirit) that is accomplished within the innermost part of man's being.

The Holy Spirit of Truth is the one who leads us into *all truth*, and the truth is that *no one has ever really been lost*! But because of man's belief in another way or power, in another God, in another Savior, in another Self -- through false belief he has operated in unbelief. He has looked outside of himself for that which could *only* be found in the place where it is. Man's True God and his own True Identity have always been located within, never without. The kingdom, or place where God rules, is *in you*.

The Master Jesus was very plainspoken about who and what you should worship. He was also very clear on how and where to find this God you should worship. Did he not say, "Worship God, and Him *only* shall you worship"? Did he not say to seek, ask and knock, and do not give up until you find the kingdom of God that is *within* you? Did he not also say to those who were abiding in unbelief and religious deception that "you worship you know not what"? And did he not say that all who worship the true God "must worship in *spirit* and in *truth*"? The answer is a resounding "Yes, he did!"

Where is this spirit and truth to be found, if not *in* you? Where and what is this True God, and how can you worship the True God if not within yourself? Do you expect the True God -- which is Spirit and Truth -- to be found in a certain building or a certain form of religious

doctrine or rituals? *Man looking for God in this manner is precisely the reason God has not been found!*

Jesus taught this message to men who were holy and devout, keepers of the Law, obedient to the instructions given in that Law, and yet they had been deceived about the real Truth concerning the real, True God. The Truth remained hidden from their eyes of understanding. So what makes anyone assume they know the Truth about the Truth today, since today *all* are doing the very same thing that those two thousand years ago were doing? Surely those in older times were as sincere and devoted in their search for God and Truth as any sincere religious person is today. So why is it that so very few are finding the True God today?

In a nutshell, the answer is that no one will *ever* find the True God, and therefore his own True Identity, until or unless he acknowledges for himself that *he will only be able to find a thing where it is!* The kingdom of God (the authority of Spirit and Life, which is God) *is in you*. *Any God that you are looking to, and any God you are looking for -- outside of yourself -- is a false god.* And God knows, these false gods are plentiful!

One *must* come to the *realization* that in order to truly experience the things promised in the Holy Scriptures, he must be willing to discard *all* of his old, previously-conceived *ideas* of a God that exists outside of himself. He must put away the myriad of false interpretations and all of man's doctrines that teach that there is someone or something *outside of* the kingdom of God that is *in you* that you should look for to save you or help you.

One who will really *think on* and accept this one simple truth -- *that the kingdom of God is within* -- will at that very point in time begin the journey *inward*. This journey will climax at the end of Truth, when he will experience true Self Identity and true God Realization. But until the journey within begins, there will only be continual wandering in the wilderness and circling of the wagons, following dead-ends.



The path to freedom is straight, sure, and safe! The treasures that all men desire and seek are all hidden within the pure heart. *Do away with* -- get rid of -- all old, pre-conceived religious beliefs and get the journey inward underway. *All is to be gained and nothing to be lost!*

To the one who has experienced the journey and has actually found the site of that which was believed to be lost (yourself -- your True Identity), to the one who is *now* in the process of the excavation previously mentioned, my word to you is simply this: whatever *lifestyle changes* you may need to make in order to complete the excavation process and receive the prize, do not hesitate to go about making them. No thing, no job, no one, no condition, and no circumstance is worth sacrificing your finding of your own true Self Identity and receiving the Prize! This Prize is Eternal Life in a fully tangible, immortal Light Body!

Use wisdom – not quickly jumping up and making radical decisions or changes in your life. Pray and ask for spiritual guidance to help you in making *any* necessary decisions concerning the changes you feel you must make. Never look to your own outer, worldly wisdom, intellect, reason, logic, or conditions for help, advice, or counsel. Making radical decisions in accordance with reason and logic will only cause shipwreck and possibly unnecessary loss for you. Such an approach may also cause unjustifiable injury to others that are a part of your present life.

Don't get in a rush. On the other hand, don't procrastinate and dilly-dally. Don't be passive. Rather, be fervent and intense. Be attentive to your Self discovery.

*Never, never* look for or receive counsel from someone -- *anyone* -- who does not encourage you to *look within yourself* for the answers, and who has not already made the journey himself. How can one who has only read or heard about a pathway, but has not himself made the journey, instruct you regarding the pitfalls, crooks, and turns on the path?

This is a journey that *all* must travel *alone*. No one from without can go *with* you, but *all* of the counselors, teachers, guides, and friends that you have need of are *in* you. While on your journey you will meet every true prophet and teacher of Truth, because they are all *in* you. Though they have been given many names, they are *all* really *One*. The *One* is, in fact, *You*.

You are the true teacher and prophet. You are that which is taught and you are that which is learned. Any true freedom one will ever experience will come from *within*, and *out of* that which is *known*. Look elsewhere if you feel you must, but *you will not find it*. As we have already discussed, you will find a thing where it is.

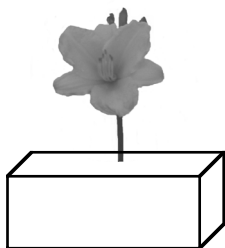
Keep following the voice that calls from within the deep, dark hole where the work of excavation is taking place (inside your heart). You *will* soon be able to reach your right arm (right consciousness) into the place that is now clean and no longer covered by all manner of debris from false beliefs and religious doctrines. You will behold (*be-hold*) the Little One. You will consciously *be* and *hold* the Truth in your righteous hand! No thing or no one is worth you risking or sacrificing this awesome experience.

The only way to Truth and Reality is by a complete departure from traditions. To those who might desire to cling to traditions or doctrinal belief systems, I would ask this question: have the traditions and / or doctrinal belief systems that you have been involved with in the past delivered this awesome prize and freedom to you? *If they have*, then do as the Master Jesus instructed -- continue in his Word, and then you shall know the Truth and the Truth that you know will be your ticket to complete, eternal freedom and everlasting Life. However if your belief systems *have not* done this for you and for those who have heretofore been your instructors, then *they will not, because they cannot*. Wisdom would say that if they could have, they would have already done so. Why continue to go around and around in a cul-de-sac?

The Way Out is straight -- not a wandering around and around, never finding the door or way out. If you have been looking and have not yet found the site of excavation and reconstruction, then I would suggest looking in a different place. You might be pleasantly surprised to find that *you have been where you are going all the time!*

If you have located the excavation and reconstruction site, simply be patient; be faithful; be consistent in the removal of all old, preconceived ideas and false beliefs, and you *will win* the Ultimate Prize. *What could be greater than finding your Self? Your Self is an immortal, tangible Body of Light!*

***The mind that is deceived is the manifestation  
of the devil -- the deceiver.***



## Chapter 6

### **THE DEVIL MADE ME DO IT**

For centuries now, organized religions and their leaders have used fear and scare tactics to keep people in the pews every Sunday. The leaders do this to keep their hands in people's wallets in order to finance their chosen lifestyles.

The fabrication concerning the existence and role of the devil was made up first by religious zealots who wanted the power to keep people deceived. Afterward, for the most part the devil fantasy was kept alive by those who ignorantly fell into the trap of deception by believing in the imaginary devil. Nowadays the hoax is accepted as truth by the masses, and to prove it the believers use a few words extracted from the Scriptures, taken totally out of context.

Most leaders today who teach this false doctrine have themselves been duped. They unknowingly go about and dupe as many others as they can by gaining their confidence and manipulating their emotions. Of course, for the most part they have no idea that they themselves are woefully deceived. Therefore they think they are doing poor, wretched sinners a favor by informing them that the devil is so powerful that he is about to overthrow God. Their message is that the devil is getting stronger and stronger by the minute, and that only the faithful few will ever be able to wiggle themselves out of his evil clutches! Even more fear tactics are applied when these poor, wretched Souls find out that they are going to burn in hell forever!

I know about this -- I know it is true that the preachers of many religious doctrines preach this. I also know that they themselves believe it. But I find no excuse for anyone who continues to believe

a lie about anything! No one should ever accept someone else's word or opinion as *final and factual* concerning something so serious as the condition, position, and final outcome of his very own Soul. Every Soul should be about the business of doing some extensive searching for Truth on its own!

Apathy, unconcern, laziness, and plain old ignorance are the attitudes of most preachers, teachers, and their followers today. People are willing to listen to almost anything and believe almost *anything but* the Truth! A sucker for lies will almost always be resistant to Truth, but will gobble up with little or no resistance the false doctrines of others -- in particular those of strangers. This is because a sucker for lies never thinks for himself, and because of this he has rarely, if ever, had an original thought in his entire life. Most people who *religiously follow a religious doctrine* are always waiting for someone -- anyone -- to vomit up the rotten, perverted doctrine of man so they can latch onto it and then run to the first weakling they can find and *regurgitate it again!*

Organized religions have never produced *anything but perverted and legalistic doctrines of men*. No matter what name tag a religion wears, no organized religion has ever provided a single spark of Spiritual Enlightenment (Inner Light). The Catholics have their interpretation of the Scriptures. The Jews have theirs. All of the rest can more or less be clumped together in their erroneous versions of right, wrong, good, evil, etc. They argue even among themselves about the correct interpretation of Scripture.

Put them all together and you come up with the same thing: nothing but man's doctrines! God is totally programmed out of all of their plans, except they occasionally use the names "God," or "Jesus" and the like in an attempt to establish some kind of authenticity for their earthly, carnal, legalistic teachings. *All of man's religions are the same*; they just follow different false beliefs to arrive at the same dead end!

By spreading their falsities, man's religions produce more and more ignorance in the minds of the people, and therefore produce more and more resistance to Truth. Man's doctrines and their teachers never identify the real need or provide real solutions for mankind. Obviously, if one does not have a drink of water for himself it is not possible to give someone else a drink!

Take a simple glance at the spiritual, emotional, financial, and general all-around condition of mankind all over the earth. You will simply have to agree that man's problems -- *all* of them -- are a direct fruit of his real needs never being identified, addressed, and met.

The real root of all of man's problems is and has always been a lack of *Spiritual Enlightenment* -- not having a knowledge of Truth within. When one is devoid of Spiritual Insight, he exists in a state of slumber, lethargy, anger, hate, fear, greed, and all manner and type of addictions -- you name it! The conditions that are present all over the world today, no matter which religious or political persuasion is in power, are not caused by corrupt *political* leaders, however. (But God knows we have plenty of corruption at *all* levels of government.) The real root of the problem actually lies squarely at the feet of *anemic spiritual leaders* who are "the blind leading the blind." Spiritually speaking, you could say, "The dead are trying to lead the dead."

For there ever to be a *cure* for all of mankind's ills, man must *first* have Spiritually Enlightened leaders instead of religious zealots who did not wait on their ministry until they were *spiritually equipped to be teachers of Truth*! A teacher that is truly called and sent of God will *first* be taught by the Holy Spirit of God in preparation for the ministry to which he or she has been called. *There is no way that anyone can receive understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life apart from Spiritual Enlightenment given by the Holy Spirit of God.* No one can teach another something that he has not *first* been taught or in some way received himself. Speaking and teaching the *Words of Truth* is the only means whereby a minister can stir up the innermost

part of the hearts of his followers and create a desire within them to *know* the truth about Who they are and what their real, true relationship is with God, their Creator. It is through the direct work of the Holy Spirit that man is drawn to Truth. All attempts to do so by other means have obviously failed.

In the vast scheme of things, there are but a mighty few who are properly equipped to teach the only true means of solving mankind's problems. This is because the leaders of man's religions have failed to go to the Source to get the Doctrine of God. They would rather do it man's way -- specifically, the way *their church doctrine teaches them*, because, after all, their predecessors did it that way. (Never mind that it has not worked!) So the end result is that *very, very few God-called ministers ever question their church doctrines* or consider that just maybe those who came before them may not have gotten it *all* right!

One hundred percent of the "self-called," so-called "ministers" never question the truth of their doctrines. They simply take their Bible, Koran, Torah, etc. and continue to spew out more and more religious bunk, thinking that the whole world should look up to them and give them special seats at public gatherings. And never mind the fact that they themselves have no understanding of one word they preach! Much less do those who follow their teachings have any spiritual insight!

These kinds of "church leaders" are cheap and selfish. They go out with others to eat and are always looking for and expecting an invitation to a free dinner. You will rarely see one of them reach for the check. They conveniently "need" to leave the table when the server comes with the check. They have the false notion that the world and *all working people* owe them a *free ride*. They sit up in their plush office or fly around in their private jets and "look for sundown and payday"! They never hit a lick at any kind of work, yet they "never have the time" nor do they feel the need to actually consult with *God* for a real message to give the people who will sit before them at the next meeting. It never



occurs to them to prepare something more for their Sunday morning sermon than to read and re-read and tell and re-tell Bible stories. Or worse yet, they read newspaper clippings, tell jokes, or talk about the last television program or movie they saw! They act as if everyone in the pews has not seen, heard, or already read this garbage for themselves.

It is a pathetic shame that you can listen to one religious television or radio program after another and never hear *one single word of Truth concerning how to find Life and Truth*. It *never* crosses the minds of these religious leaders that the reason most people “religiously” attend their religious gatherings is because they are aware that *they have an inner need* -- though few recognize it as a Spiritual need. Sadly, most who attend will leave the Sunday, Wednesday, or other meetings more confused, empty, bored, and hopeless, if possible, than they were before they went there. The rest did not *expect* to receive anything of a Spiritually Enlightening nature, so they leave the meetings just as they came.

No Truth has ever been born out of a lie. Incorruption has never been born out of corruption. No peace has ever come out of fear. No Spiritual Enlightenment has ever come or ever will come from those who are themselves devoid of *Spiritual Insight*. Truly, the vast majority of religious leaders today are absolutely *not taught*, and therefore *not sent* by God -- regardless of what position *man* has raised them up to occupy, what “holy title” they may be given through their religious affiliation, or what honor they may have taken to themselves.

Even though some who are holding seats in high places were *originally*, actually *called of God*, soon after they answered the “God call” they began to follow the biddings of man and leave behind the *Voice of God*. Soon thereafter, the desire for great name recognition stirred within them, and greed for money, attention, and the approval of their peers simply overcame them. They are blinded by their carnal minds and thereby overpowered by the dictates of their senses, and they never knew where or when *they*

*left behind the God that actually called them.* What is even more sad, repulsive, and unacceptable is the fact that so many of these worldwide religious leaders speak to tens of millions on a daily basis by way of television, radio, and worldwide meetings, and they brag about how many years they have been preaching -- some up to *fifty years and beyond*. Despite all these years of preaching, they are still operating in the ignorance produced by their carnal mind.

So, we readily see where the idea and belief in “the devil” has come from. I will here and now give you a few verses of Scripture that will once and for all identify the “*devil*” for what it really is! Let me first say, though, that but for the Mercy and Grace (Divine Influence of God) and the Divine Spiritual Revelation of Truth about the so-called-devil, I would still believe as myriads of others do today. I would still be living life only as a sorry existence made up of fear, doubt, guilt, and self condemnation. But because the Truth *really does* set one *free from* (not in) the doctrines and beliefs of man, I am free, peaceful and happy. I have a great self-image and self-confidence! This can only come from possessing a *Knowledge of Truth from within*.

None of man’s doctrines will ever be able to teach or give these precious and imperative jewels of Life to anyone. The truth concerning the Law of Life can only come from man’s Creator / Father / Mother God. These precious jewels of Truth are imparted to all honest Truth seekers by Spiritual Revelation of the Living Word of God. *All Spiritually-Enlightened leaders and teachers will* point you in the direction of Self-discovery (or God Realization)!

*Spiritual things cannot be taught, nor can they be learned.* They must and can only be *experienced* -- and that only by the sincere, honest, and pure heart of the seeker of Truth. All who seek will find!

Now, to give you the Scripture references I promised. “The devil” is called by many names, just as “God” is called by many names. So to assist you to properly and clearly see what the Bible has to say about the devil, let us examine some of the other names used

for this adversary. Here are a few: satan, the serpent, the dragon, the deceiver, liar, the father of lies, the tempter, the angel of death, the enemy, and many others. I think from these names you can see a clear picture of *who and what* the one is who is most often referred to as “the devil.” You will find additional names for the devil listed in Appendix 2.

Let us look at some specific Scriptures. In the following I will only quote excerpts of the Scriptures cited, however I do recommend you read the entire references.

Luke 4:1-8: “And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, being forty days *tempted of the devil*. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And *the devil* said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command *this stone* that it be *made bread*. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not *live by bread alone*, but by *every word of God*... And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, *Satan*: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.”

We see here that the devil (the tempter) was offering Jesus “bread” contrary to the “Word of God” (the True Bread). We know that Moses wrote the Law of man on tables of stone. These tables of stone are the stony hearts of man mentioned in Jesus’ parable of the sower in Matthew 13:20-21. This Law of man is the *bread* with which the devil was tempting Jesus.

You will notice in these verses that the one that is called *the devil* is also called *the tempter* and *satan*. Now let’s go to another time and place where Jesus was attempting to teach his followers about who and / or what the devil is and does.

Look next at John 5:37-47. I will only cite verses 39 and 45 here: Jesus said, “Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me... Do not think

that I will *accuse* you to the Father: there is one that *accuseth* you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.”

Jesus plainly tells us here who *the accuser* is -- he says it is Moses. Well, we all know that he certainly was not speaking of Moses (a man), but rather of *Moses the message* – the message that the man called Moses gave to the people. We also see that Jesus was clearly instructing them to study (search) the Scriptures in order to find the Truth in them.

Let us now look at another Scripture in John 6:32: “Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that *bread from heaven*; but my Father giveth you the *true bread from heaven*.” Again Jesus is doing the teaching here. It is pretty obvious that the true “bread” he speaks of is the message that *he* has come to impart to all who will hear it. It is also obvious that *his* message is a *different message*, and that it came from a different source than the message that Moses had delivered to the people. Jesus referred to the message of Moses as simply *bread*, but he said the message he was now bringing was the *true bread*. Well then, was he saying that Moses’ bread was *not true bread*? If Moses’ bread was not from heaven -- as Jesus’ was -- then where did it come from?

Let us continue. Please read Revelation 12:9-17. I will cite only verses nine and ten:

“And the great *dragon* was cast out, that old *serpent*, called the *Devil*, and *Satan*, which *deceiveth* the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his *angels* were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the *accuser of our brethren* is cast down, which *accused them before our God day and night*. ”

As we have already said, in all of the Scripture verses we have used we see that “the devil” is called by many names. In Revelation 12:9 he is called the great dragon, that old serpent, the devil, satan, and the deceiver of the whole world.

In Revelation 12:10 he is called “*the accuser of our brethren which accused them before God day and night.*” Remember that in John 5:45 Jesus told them that *Moses would accuse them before the Father*. In Revelation 9:13, the devil is also called the persecutor. There are many more Bible references to the devil that clearly state who and what he is, but I think you get the message!

If anyone will seriously consider what we are saying here and consider the source of the information, the only conclusion a person can possibly come to is that “the devil,” along with all of the other titles given to *it*, is nothing more or less than *the carnal Law given by Moses*. By this carnal law men came to know and believe in good and evil, thereby becoming double minded. *Men believe in dual powers.*

When men are in a carnal state of consciousness, they are deceived by this earthly Law, and because of ignorance to the Law of Life they live under the fear and condemnation brought by the earthly Law. If a person could use his carnal mind and earthly senses to overcome self condemnation and guilt, there would not have been a need for a man named “Jesus” who brought a body of knowledge wherein is a message of hope to the world. In the Moses body of knowledge, man had no hope.

The Law of Moses and the prophets *accused* and found every Soul guilty, placing upon every man a sentence of death. The message Jesus taught is the reason the followers of the Law of Moses were always *accusing* him of blasphemy and calling him a “Beelzebub” or lunatic. It was not because of Jesus himself, but rather it was *the message* that the man Jesus sent forth.

Not only did Jesus tell his *accusers* that their *father* was *the devil* (their *father* Moses was the carnal Law), but he also said that the *devil* was a *liar* and the *father* of it (the lie)! Moses was the father of the carnal Law. His message was just the opposite of the message of Jesus, which was the True Bread. The carnal *earthly*

Law came by the *man* Moses, unlike the message of Jesus which came from *heaven*. The difference here is that the *Moses bread* came by the spirit of man, but the *Jesus Bread* (True Bread) came by the Spirit of God.

The Higher Law (the heavenly, True Bread) works in man's consciousness in an exactly opposite way than the earthly, carnal Law. The True Bread sets men free *from* condemnation, guilt, and the sentence of death by revealing the Truth to the seeker. But the Law of man found all guilty and sentenced all to death because of its deceptive nature. *This is why mankind must be renewed in the Spirit of his Mind.* In other words, he must be *born again!*

The renewing of man's conscious mind is accomplished by one's acceptance of the Truth that is *revealed* by the Holy Spirit of Truth. But you must understand that the things (Truth) of God cannot be understood by the natural mind, because the things of the Law of the Spirit of Life must be *spiritually discerned*. The carnal mind is an enemy to the Mind of God and they continually war against each other. The flesh (the earthly mind) wars against the Spirit (the heavenly Mind) and the Spirit wars against the flesh.

Romans 3:4 says, "Let God be true, but *every* man a liar." Romans 8:2 also tells us that the body of Knowledge that Jesus brought, which was the Knowledge of Truth (called the Law of the Spirit of Life), was given to set every Soul free from "the Law of sin and death" -- the Law of Moses.

In Romans 7:7 we read, "I had not *known* sin but by the law." Romans 7:8 says, "For without the law, sin was dead." Verse 11 says, "for sin, taking occasion by the commandments (Law) *deceived* me, and by it slew (killed) me" (or sentenced me to death).

Let us take a closer look at verse seven: "I had not *known* sin but by the law (of Moses)." We know that in order to *know* something we must have *knowledge*. We also *know* that sin is said to be *evil*.

So then it is by the Law of Moses that man came to have a *knowledge of sin* (evil). Likewise, it was by the same Law that man first became aware of and received the *knowledge of good*. It was when man first partook of (ate from) *the tree of the knowledge of good and evil* that his eyes were opened; he then had a *knowledge* of both good *and* evil. Until this time he had no knowledge of good or evil because everything in his conscious mind was the same. In this state, Man / Soul knew no sin, therefore he was innocent. Genesis 3:22 confirms this: “and the Lord God said, behold, the man is become as one of us, to *know* (have knowledge of) good and evil.”

We see clearly here that the Law of Moses is earthly and carnal and came by man. We have also discovered that the message of Jesus was from heaven and was a Spiritual Law. We have also learned that all things that are of man are earthly -- *and are a lie* -- and that the heavenly bread is True Bread (or Truth).

So I ask you, “What is a lie?” Well, I would say a lie is *that which is not*. That which is no-thing is a lie, and therefore it cannot be anything real or have reality. Gross perversion and misinterpretation of the Scriptures by man’s carnal mind (mostly through organized religions) has mesmerized, deceived, and indoctrinated most of mankind and thereby lulled man into believing a lie.

The vast majority of men are duped by false doctrine. Many people are filled with belief in a lie. The lie *about* the devil *is* the devil! Many automatically use this illusion to justify any and all of their misguided misuse of the power resident in every person who has come to earth. These individuals say, “The devil made me do it,” and the truth is -- the devil *did* make them do it! The devil is their carnal mind and its fruit. As long as man remains in a state of deception, perverted in his thinking and believing a lie to be Truth, he will continue to operate in a state of mysticism, delusion, and impotence.

PLEASE GO NOW TO THE CLOSEST MIRROR. The person you will see looking back at you is your *deceiver*, the “devil” --

*your carnal mind!* When you conquer this one, with all of its pretense, self-delusions, denial, guilt, and condemnation, and you know the rest... then believe you me, *the war will be over!*

All of man's battles are in the mind. The mind is the battleground for all people. From where you are now to the end of the war, there may be many more battles in your mind. But you can win the war if you dare to believe in God (the Knowledge of Good) -- and if you believe in the Truth as *the only Power in the Universe* -- and deny any and all knowledge of evil (the lie, which is the devil). Romans 13:1 says, "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." Note that this verse says that *there is no power but of God*. Knowledge is power!

Romans 8:7 says that the *carnal mind* is the *enemy* (the devil) against God. Romans 8:6 says, "For to be carnally minded *is* death." Does not the Scripture also declare the devil to be the author of death? Yes, it does! The mind that is *deceived* is the manifestation of *the devil* -- *the deceiver!*

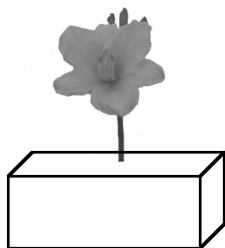
God created *Man* who *is* a Soul. Man does not *have* a Soul, He *is* a Soul. The Spirit of God within Man is the creator and teacher of the Soul. The Spirit of God is the Spirit of Wisdom that comes down out of heaven from God. The Spirit of God is the Life of the True Bread -- the message of Christ.

In the beginning the plan and idea for Man that was in Cosmic Mind (the Mind of God) was to create an earthly form (Man, or Soul) in the express likeness of God, with all of His attributes. As the Soul travels along the pathway toward its intended destiny, it must put off the old carnal, earthly, sensual, devilish nature. It must put on the Mind and nature of God! This is done through Christ (the True Bread), which is the Light that gives us Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life. This Understanding is received by the Soul only by Divine Revelation! The natural, carnal mind of man cannot receive or understand this Truth.



If you or if someone you know believes in *the devil* as a real, viable, and invisible entity, I challenge you to read and re-read this chapter until the *Truth* of it opens your eyes of understanding! Pray, meditate, and think on these words until you see the *Light!* ***Then go prove to your friends and loved ones the truth: that THE DEVIL IS A LIE!***

***Only Truth is real. Enfolded within  
Truth is found all Reality!***



## Chapter 7

### THE DEVIL IS A LIE

When speaking to the multitude, the Master Jesus said, “*You* are of *your* father, the devil.” He said, “The devil *is* a liar and the father of it.” He also said about the devil, “He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.” So then, he that *is* a lie *is* a devil and *is* the father of *himself*!

In John 3:14, Jesus said, “As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up.” The word “lifted” used here means to exalt, elevate, or put in a high position.

Let us also look at Numbers 21:5-9: “And the people spake against God, and against Moses, Wherefore have ye brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? For there is no bread, neither is there any water; and our soul loatheth this *light bread*. And the Lord sent *fiery serpents* among the people, and they *bit* the people; and much people of Israel *died*. Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the Lord, and against thee; pray unto the Lord, that he take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people. And the Lord said unto Moses, Make thee a *fiery serpent*, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live. And Moses made a *serpent of brass*, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a *serpent* had bitten any man, when he beheld the *serpent of brass*, he lived.”

We see here that the thing the people were bitten by was also the source of their healing. Verse six says that the fiery serpents that

the *Lord* sent among the people to “bite them and make them sick” also caused many to die. The serpent was also the means by which they were healed. The difference between health and life and sickness and death for the people was their point of view and their viewing point of the serpent. We see that when the source of sickness and death was exalted, or lifted upon a pole, the change in position of their belief system was all that was needed for them to live and not die. When the people looked upon the serpent that had been exalted, they received healings for all of their sickness and diseases. The thing that bit them and made them sick also healed them and gave them life.

Here we see that the serpent cast out the serpent! So once again we refer to the words of Jesus when he said, “a house divided against itself cannot stand.” How then can satan, the devil, that old deceiver, the serpent, cast out itself?

Here is how: when one interprets the Word of God by his natural mind he is led to believe in dual powers. Because of his inability to understand a Spiritual Law by his natural mind, he is deceived by it and he believes a lie because of the “deadness of the letter.” It (the Word interpreted by a man’s natural mind) is as a seed not yet planted and germinated. Once it is quickened and given life, the lie is exposed and Truth is known!

In Mark 8:33, Jesus rebuked Peter and said to him (calling Peter *satan*): “Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not (do not understand) the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.” Romans 8:7 leaves no doubt about who and what satan is, telling us that “the carnal mind (of man) is the enemy of God.”

In Galatians 5:17 the apostle Paul said that the Spirit and the flesh war against each other because they are “contrary the one to the other.” The word *contrary* used here means to be an opponent, an adversary, or an objection; to resist or oppose.

These Scriptures tell us that *man’s enemy is his carnal mind*. The carnal mind, then, *is* the devil, and all of man’s battles are battles in his mind.

When a person is deceived, he does not know he is deceived. Of course, if he did know he was deceived, he would no longer be deceived. When a person is deceived, he *believes* a lie. Belief in the lie is the deception. If a person believes a lie, he believes the devil, that old serpent, who is the creator of the lie that he believed to be true. If that which is a lie is believed to be true, then the believer of the lie will act or react as though it *is* true. Therefore, belief in any thing the lie brings with it is also the lie. If the devil *is* a lie and *is* the father or source of itself, then anything that the lie would hold within itself would also be a lie.

If we understand that the devil that has deceived the whole world *is* a lie, we must also understand that the lie is a no-thing. It is only an imagination by which everyone who believed it to be true has been deceived.

We must then conclude that when one is *no longer* deceived, he *no longer* believes the lie by which he was deceived. We will also have to conclude that if the *source* of the sickness and death was a lie, then the sickness and death can also only be a lie!

How can anything *true* and *real* come out of a thing that *is not* -- that has no reality or real existence? If a lie is *nothing* -- then it is impossible for *something real* to come out of *nothing*. If all sickness and death came out of *something that is not* (a lie), then please tell me how can that which *is not* produce something -- anything -- that *is*!

The lie cannot of itself produce anything, because *it is no-thing* and therefore it *is not*. Belief in it can produce all manner of imaginations and more lies, but the things imagined are still only imaginary; they are delusions! Any appearance of, or belief in, anything that is not *one with* and therefore compatible with Life and health is nothing more than a lie that has *no Truth in it*!

Belief in a lie is but an imagination -- a delusion, or a deception - - and one who is deceived will fall into all manner of traps. He or she will follow all manner of voices or decoys. James 1:14 says,

“Every man is tempted when *he* is drawn away (from the Truth) of *his own lust* (appetite) and enticed (deceived).”

A duck decoy or voice of an imitation duck only *sounds* like a duck. *It is not a duck*. However the one who is deceived has no conscious awareness of being deceived. If and when the individual becomes conscious or aware of the deception, then the lie is no longer believed and all the imaginations that came with and through belief in the lie will also simply fade away. Lies and darkness are dissolved in the Presence of Truth and Light.

Any *belief* in anything that is not Light (which is eternal Life) is a belief in a lie. *Only Truth is*. All else is but fiction and mysticism -- delusion and deception. “If thou canst believe” that *all* things are yours, then all things *are* yours. The Truth is that even if you do not believe this Truth, it is nevertheless true. What you believe is the only thing (wall) between you and *all things*! You must tear down this wall!

If the foregoing is true -- *and it is* -- then any and all *appearance* or belief in imperfection and any appearance or belief in lack of any kind must be and is a lie. It is the fruit of the imagination or lie that was believed to be true!

As we have already established, belief in a lie does not make it Truth. Therefore a lie believed has no reality of itself -- no matter how real it may appear to be or how long it has been believed to be true. It is *believed* to be real by the one who has the image or imagination of its realness. Because of his belief in the lie, it establishes a state of delusion in which that person lives and operates his life.

This is the sum total of mankind’s imagined problems: *belief in that which is not*. There is no reality in an imagined problem. The truth is that there is only one solution for all imagined problems, and that solution is for each person to *find the Knowledge of Truth*. This and only this will affect a person’s belief system and cause in him a change of mind.

The non-reality of the darkness is proven each time one turns on the Light! The appearance of darkness has no power or ability to manifest in the presence of Light. The same goes for a lie; it has no power or ability to manifest when the Light of Truth dawns upon one's conscious awareness.

There can be no real belief in a thing that *is not* when that which is, is manifested and proven to *be*! How can someone convince you that darkness is present in a room after you have entered the room and turned on the Light, when the *only* presence that *is* and has any *beingness* in the room where you are is Light? Mankind needs only to enter into the Light; there he shall behold no darkness, because *it is not*.

If you walk, live, and have your beingness in conscious awareness of Reality, then *in you* will be no darkness, lies, images, or imaginations. All imagined things associated with belief in the lie will flee away, just as the appearance of darkness flees in a room when you enter and turn on the light. Darkness has no power or ability to put up a fight or argument about who has jurisdiction over the room or the right to occupy the space. The appearance of it simply disappears because *it never had any reality in the first place*.

The *only* way the appearance of darkness will ever manifest *again* will be when *you* turn off the Light. The darkness cannot of itself turn off the Light, but *you* can! The truth is, however, that you can only *imagine* yourself to turn off the Light -- because that which has the appearance of darkness *is also* Light. It is simply manifesting to the one who believes in it according to his belief.

Everything centers in and revolves around that which an individual believes or disbelieves. Of course, even unbelief is still believing. What a person holds in his belief system is the fulcrum that turns the wheel of Life and death. It is not the wheel that needs to be changed, but rather the thing that turns the wheel -- the *belief system*! A person acts and reacts throughout his entire life according to what he believes.

No one who is consciously aware of a thing being false would purposefully give the thing any attention. He therefore gives it no Life Energy. Why would anyone give his Life Force or Energy to a thing that has no real, true existence if he is aware of its non-reality? So you see how foolish and unprofitable it is to believe in and act out a thing *that only holds its beingness in your belief system!* This is why it is so very important that all people *seek after Truth until they find It*. Truly, where your attention goes, your Life Force (Energy) flows!

Purpose in your heart to find *Truth*, and to know the Truth *about* the Truth. When Truth has been discovered, then all fiction -- all non-Truth -- will flee away. All lies will vanish from your belief system, as they are no longer believed. Just as your Conscious Awareness of the Light removes all belief in the darkness, so does your Conscious Awareness of Truth remove all belief in fiction. After an individual has truly found and knows the Truth about the Truth concerning the Law of Life in Spirit, then his Life and Beingness are established and settled only in that which has True Reality. *The only thing that has True Reality is That Which Is True.*

Truth holds within it no lie, fiction, delusion, imagination, image, or mysticism.

*Only Truth is real. Enfolded within Truth is found all Reality!*

When a person has found Truth, he truly has found *all things!* Seek, search, knock, and ask Spirit to assist you in your quest to know Truth. Truth will be found by all who have a made-up-mind and whose desire is intense enough to continue the search until the Treasure has been found!

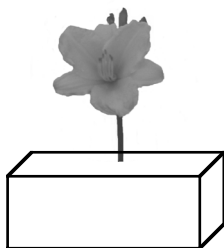
So do not give up! Do not grow weary or impatient, or you will faint in your mind! Do not allow friends or family to discourage you.

Don't compromise yourself. Don't settle for defeat and failure. The easiest thing anyone will ever do is *give up!* There is no price too great to pay for *real freedom*. Truth truly will set you free!





***The work of Spirit by Grace through Faith is performed  
within the heart and mind of Man, which  
together are the Workshop of Deity.***



## Chapter 8

### THE ANTI-CHRIST

It was because of the carnal (earthly or natural) mind of man that he came to have a knowledge of evil. It was through the knowledge provided by the Law of Moses that man came to know sin and therefore to know evil. It is through this knowledge that mankind came to believe in duality and thereby became double-minded.

These two levels of conscious understanding became the entities known as *God* and *the devil* -- of good and evil! Later, these two “brothers” became known as *Truth and lies*, or the Father of Truth and the father of lies.

One of the last records in the Scriptures that makes distinction between these two is found in I John 4:6. Please read the entire chapter. Note verse 6, where these two are identified as the Spirit of Truth and the spirit of error.

If you were to study the myriad of names and titles that these two ideas or entities have been assigned, you would find after you have sifted through all the conglomerate of words that *the spirit of error is nothing more than the wisdom of man*. It is also sometimes called the spirit of man. By this we know that the knowledge or word of man is *the devil*, and the wisdom or life of man which came out of man’s knowledge (the devil) is *the anti-Christ*. The word “anti-Christ” simply means anti-Truth or anti-Light. The title or name “Christ” means Light -- which literally means *the understanding of Truth*.

It was by the wisdom (woman, or Eve) of man that man was and is deceived. Jesus said that the wisdom of the Law (Moses) is not the true bread. So then, the devil got his name and power through

the spirit of error or the wisdom which came from the *knowledge* of the tree of *the knowledge of good and evil*. It was the woman (wisdom) who gave to the man to eat -- not the man who gave to the woman. The woman (wisdom) *came out of* the man (knowledge) and gave life to the seed (word) by the understanding of man's knowledge. Without the spirit (wisdom, the woman), the man is dead. So then sin (or the man / knowledge / word / seed of evil) was dead until the woman (wisdom) which came out of man gave it life (gave man a son -- understanding, or increase).

The carnal, natural mind of man is anti-Christ or anti-Truth. It is also known in the Scriptures as "the son of the bondwoman." The flesh (the word or knowledge of man) without the blood (the spirit of man, or man's wisdom) is dead.

The law (or knowledge) of man is the devil. The spirit or life of man's (or, the devil's) knowledge is corrupt and evil, and is an evil spirit -- the spirit of error. The spirit or life of man's knowledge is the light that rules the children of darkness. This spirit is the life of the word of error. It is the lesser light (the moonlight) that rules the children of the night.

Before "the woman" was taken out of "man" (or wisdom was taken out of knowledge) there was no *life* or *light* in man (the word). God said "It is not good that man (the word -- knowledge) should be *alone*" and in darkness. The *word* without *life and light* is blind and *cannot increase itself*. The life of the word is the woman, which is spirit. The life, or man's ability to increase in knowledge, is *through wisdom* -- the spirit *of man* -- his natural mind!

The Life and ability for man to increase in the Knowledge *of Truth* is through the Mind of Christ (God). The Spirit *of God* is the Wisdom (mother). She is the Tree of Life from which comes all Truth (True bread). The seed (knowledge) of man (Moses' Law) is the devil (the deceiver), and his offspring or son through the woman is "the son of perdition" -- the destroyer. This son of man is the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of evil. This tree of wisdom is the bondwoman.

The “son of man” is *the understanding* that is the child of the man (*the knowledge* of the earthly, carnal Law) and the woman (*the wisdom* of the earthly, carnal Law). The son of man is simply a body of knowledge -- the earthly form of knowledge. It is called the knowledge and spirit of flesh. It is also called a lie and the father (spirit) of error. This is the form (or seed / son) *that must be born again!* This body of knowledge is the knowledge of the devil, out of which comes the knowledge of every evil thing.

In order for the son of man (which is called the knowledge of understanding of man) to become the Son of God (the Knowledge of God, or the Good Seed / Word), it must experience a metamorphic change -- a transformation. It must be born again. This is done *by Spirit through Truth*, which is *by Grace through Faith*. This is the work that must be accomplished in the *workshop of Deity*. This workshop is the *heart* and *mind* of man. This is the location of and the place where the kingdom of God can and will be found.

Only the Word of God is Truth. As the Scriptures say, “Let God be true and every man a lie.” Said another way, every word (or seed) produced by the spirit (wisdom) of man is a lie. A lie is a devil (the deceiver) and the devil is evil. Evil is of the night (darkness, or ignorance to Truth). Every Word of God is Truth and is produced by the Spirit of God (the Wisdom of God). Every Word of God is the Good Seed and is of the Day (Light).

If every man is a lie, then only lies can come out of a lie. So then since we understand that woman came out of man, the woman must *also* be a lie. How then can a lie that came out of a lie give birth to *anything but* another lie?! This fruit (or child) of the woman (lie) is the opposer of Truth that is the enemy of God called anti-Truth, or anti-Christ!

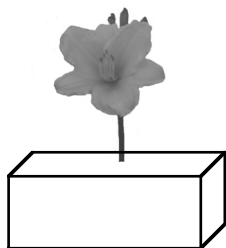
The Scriptures say that the Wisdom of God is *justified in her children*, which are the children of the Day. They are the Words of Spirit and Life. *These Words of Spirit and Life are the sanctified and holy Children of the Most High God.*

The son of the freewoman (the Wisdom of God) is the enemy of the son of the bondwoman (the wisdom of man). These two are contrary, the one to the other. The flesh argues against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh. One is pro-Truth (pro-Life) and the other is pro-lie (pro-death).

We are speaking here concerning two bodies of knowledge. One is true and one is false. The True Doctrine of God brings Life and Peace. The false doctrine of man (anti-Christ) brings death and fear.



***Follow the Light of Life.  
Living Words give Life to the hearer.***





## Chapter 9

### **FOLLOWING THE LEADER**

In today's society, especially in religious circles, you can find just about anything that suits your fancy concerning doctrine. Take the word "faith" for example -- a simple word that most all of the traditional religions use. One preacher will say "turn loose of your faith." Another will say, "Hold on to your faith," and yet another will say, "step out on your faith," or "use your faith." Well, if you look to religion for instruction, *just which one of these do you suppose you should follow?*

First you must be sure that you actually have some "faith" before you decide what exactly you should do with it. But if you don't really know *what* it is, how will you know if you have it or not? Preachers often quote only parts of the Scriptures, and rarely do they actually teach or explain what the words they are quoting actually mean.

Let us look again at the word *faith*. Hebrews 11:1 says it is a substance, and that this substance is evidence or proof of the unseen or invisible Creative Presence. I have yet to hear anyone say or teach *exactly how* you would hold onto, let go of, step out on, or use this "stuff" called faith.

Given the many various and diverse doctrines constantly streaming over the radio waves and television channels, you would be hard put to choose the right teacher and doctrine that you should follow. I strongly advise anyone and everyone to be very careful regarding who you give your allegiance to, or who you trust. Before you assign too much authority to anyone, be sure they fully *earn* and are worthy of your trust.

You might ask, “How do I do this? How do I determine who is really a God-called, God-taught, and God-sent minister? They all *say* they are called, taught, and sent by God!” Well, in a nutshell, every minister that is *truly* called, taught, and sent of God *will* be working the work of God, and therefore *they will be God -- at work!*

I will present more on this later in this chapter. But first let us look at a couple of Scriptures that quote the man Jesus, and also take a look at the effects his words had on those who heard them. These same words still affect mankind until this present day, when they are spoken by one who has the same authority that Jesus had.

The man Jesus *spoke* the Word of God *by* the Spirit of God, and thereby he worked the work of God. All who are called (chosen), taught, and sent as he was will do likewise. All who do not qualify for this same ministry and its full effects should wait on their ministry. If they are truly called to this ministry, when they are adequately trained and properly equipped, then they will be *sent*. All who follow them will be able to *experience* the true work of God through the *God worker*.

God is a Spirit! Whatever work that is done by God is a *work of Spirit*. Only those who are truly anointed (illuminated) by Spirit and led by Spirit qualify to do this work of Spirit.

There are a number of Scriptures that leave no doubt as to the kind of leader you should follow. The apostle Paul said, “As many as are *led by* the Spirit of God, they are the Sons of God.” Jesus said, “When He, the Spirit of Truth has come, He will *lead you* into *all* Truth. He will bring to your remembrance all things whatsoever I have said, and show you things to come.” Jesus also said, “If you continue in my word, you shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you free.”

In addition, Jesus said, “I am the Way (*to follow*), the Truth, and the Life (Light). My words, they are Spirit and they are Life. I am the bread of Life. The bread that I give is not of the world, but

it came down out of heaven from God. Moses gave you not that bread from heaven. He that eateth of me shall never die.” These words that Jesus spoke, and the description he gave of the words, tell us that we should only seek to follow a leader whose words are full of Light and Life -- words that edify and increase you. Living words give Life to the hearer.

This bread (or word) that Jesus spoke of is the *wisdom that comes down out of heaven from God*. He is saying, “The bread / wisdom / fruit that I give is not of this world, or this earthly tabernacle. Follow Me! Follow My words! They will lead you to Christ (the Father).” More simply put, if you follow the message of Christ and continue therein, it (the message) will *lead you* to the state of God Consciousness!

There are many voices and many *words* that man hears constantly. They come from all directions and with many meanings, thoughts, and ideas. So how do I know which one to follow that I may find eternal Life? What will I have found when I come to the end of my search? Exactly *what is* eternal Life? Is it just breathing and keeping one’s heart beating forever, or is it more than that? If it is more than that, what exactly is it? In the remainder of this chapter I will attempt to answer these questions.

We do not need to look very hard or long to understand that the message (or word) that the messenger Jesus had in his mouth was the bread that would give eternal Life to those who would *eat it, do* what it instructed them to do, and continue therein. So when Jesus said, “Follow Me,” he actually was saying, “Follow the words and instructions I give, and you shall *be* as I am, you shall *know* what I *know*, and you shall know *Who* I know! But this will never be true for anyone who does not *do as I say*.”

The instructions enfolded in his message that he gave to all alike are very simple and straightforward. The man Jesus, the messenger with the message of eternal Life, gave to all men easy and simple rules and guidelines to follow. He simply said to those who

inquired of him as to where he got his authority, "Follow Me. By simply and unwaveringly following the road map enfolded within the message, all of your questions will be answered. However, your questions will not be answered by *hearing* the words that I speak, *but rather by you doing what you hear.*" By giving your heart and ear to hear Truth only, you will be able to discern which voice (word or message) to follow. You will come to know Truth from fiction. You will be able to separate the wheat from the tares.

This ability to know and recognize the Truth from error can only be achieved by one who is a doer and not a hearer only! The voice (single voice) of the wheat (Bread of Life) will always edify. It will be pure, peaceful, pleasant, kind, gentle, and easy to receive with thanksgiving. But the voices (plural -- the tares) will always be confusing and argumentative; they will always cause restlessness, fear, and uncertainty. Any imagined peace they bring will only be temporary. This is why we need to try the "spirits" (words / voices) to see if they be of Truth or of fiction; of Life or of death; real or imagined; wheat or tares. Do they bring good news or a negative message? Do they give *real peace* or do they generate *fear*?

If you continue your pursuit of Truth with an honest and sincere love for Truth, then Truth you shall surely find! You will come to know and recognize the one Voice that will *lead* you into all Truth. Eternal Life and immortality are embodied in the words of Truth that are *quickened by* the Spirit of Truth (the Spirit of Wisdom). Words alone -- though they be Truth -- are but dead and unprofitable if not quickened (given new Life, planted and germinated) by the Spirit. It is the Spirit (the Father -- the *Life of* the seed) who gives the increase / revelation.

A farmer who has stored much seed in his barn cannot expect or hope for a harvest at harvest time unless he properly prepares the ground (the earthly temple), sows the seeds, carefully watches over them, and waters them until new life appears on the surface of the earth. He must be diligent in attending to all of his duties.

After this it is only a matter of watching and waiting joyfully, expecting the buds, then the blooms, then the fruit to appear.

This is the process by which to experience spiritual maturity. The harvest is the reward for your labor of Love and is called the “Crown of Life.” It is also called the Christ Mind or God Consciousness.

The mind (heart) is the workshop of Spirit and is the center of one’s activity of thinking. The Scriptures say that, “As a man *thinketh* in his *heart* (the center of his being or mind), *so is he*.” If a man thinks thoughts of Life / God / Good, then he, the thinker, is the same as the thoughts that he thinks. In John 17:17, Jesus said, “*Sanctify* them (meaning you and I who believe Truth and follow Its *leading*) through Thy truth; Thy word is Truth.” In Hebrews 2:11 we read that “both he that *sanctifieth* and they who *are sanctified* are all *of one*.” We see here that the one who partakes or consumes the Bread of Life (Word of Truth) will receive the Crown of Life (the Christed state of consciousness, or the Illuminated Mind -- also called the Cosmic Mind). It really matters not what you call it, its effect is Eternal Life. Just as the thinker is the same as the thought and the sanctified is the same as the sanctifier, so also he who eats the Bread of Life is the same as that which he has eaten or consumed.

So in order to follow one who leads, one must go where the leader goes and do what he does. In this case, to follow the instructions or leading of the Spirit of God within you is simply to obey by doing what the Instructor instructs you to do. By doing so, you will become the thing you are doing; by following the leader, you join yourself to the leader and in fact become one with the thing you have been instructed to do.

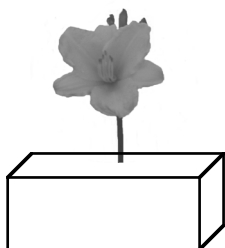
*You cannot separate a thought from the thinker. Similarly, you cannot separate the doer of the work from the work he has done.*

Jesus was asked, “What must we do that we might work the work of God?” Although his answer was not quite as plain as the

following, he essentially said, “for one to actually ‘work the work of God,’ he must first *be* the work of God, and then *be God at work!*” The Scriptures tell us that “He that cometh to God must believe that he is (God).” Since there is none “good” *but* God, when anyone does a “good work,” they must be God *at work!* The Spirit of God that will *lead* you into all Truth will also *lead* you to do all good (God) works!



***If a man gain the whole world and lose his Soul,  
what has he profited?***





## Chapter 10

### **LET’S TALK ABOUT THE TITHE:** **WILL A MAN ROB GOD?**

In today’s religious circles one hears a constant plea for money from preachers of all denominations. Quite often the Holy Scriptures are used to pressure and coerce the prospective giver into giving money -- their “tithes and offerings.” Most of the preachers use the Scripture verses of Malachi 3:8-10 to make their case: “Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed Thee? In tithes and offerings. Ye are cursed with a curse; for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.”

To be sure, this kind of teaching is nothing short of simple error and ignorance to the spiritual Law of Life. It is a shameful way that preachers use to extort money from their followers. They practice the tactics of fear mixed with greed and ignorance in order to afford their large, extravagant buildings; their soft, plush offices; and their high seats in the congregations -- not to mention their private jets! They exalt one another while much of the time envying the one with the most seats and highest head count on Sunday morning. At the same time, the *true work* and the true building of the temple of God goes undone and unknown. These kind of practices by religious leaders *will* and *must* stop. What follows here is the correct interpretation of *true* tithing.

Ten percent of a farmer's crop (or harvest) is the amount he sets aside for next year's planting. Ninety percent is left for him to eat and to feed his family, flock, and herds. But if the farmer fails to plant the ten percent, then there can be no increase at harvest time. This is how God is robbed -- failure to plant and experience an increase. Here is the spiritual interpretation of this picture:

When a person is called of God and he applies himself to pray, study, and search for Truth (knowledge), God gives him a measure (seeds of knowledge) to plant in his garden (mind). As he watches over what he has *learned* and meditates on it day and night -- "day" meaning the part he understands by way of his natural mind, or spirit of man, and "night" meaning the part he does not understand -- then he will receive a harvest of wisdom (the wisdom of man). Out of this wisdom will come understanding by way of the mind or spirit of man. This is how one grows in the knowledge of the god of this earth, which is the Law of Moses and the prophets. These are the beginning stages of his learning process. Within the fruit of understanding of man are more seed (Knowledge) to start the process all over again.

As one *continues* in study, prayer and meditation on the Holy Scriptures, he or she will begin a positive and definite change in his or her belief system. The individual will continue to grow and expand his knowledge of the Holy Scriptures and it will bring him to Spiritual Enlightenment, which is Christ (Faith). This is the manner in which the House or Temple of God is built as a dwelling place for the Heavenly Father. Failure to produce an increase robs God! The God that is being robbed is the Soul that does not increase or prosper in the Knowledge of Truth.

The Law of Moses and the prophets is our schoolmaster. The study of this body of knowledge represents the "letters that killeth." We need to know that the phrase "killeth" that is used here simply means that as we study these words (seed) we are actually planting them in our hearts and minds. As we conduct our life in accordance with the moral teachings of the Law, the words will be quickened (resurrected) in our

heart and mind as a *new body of Knowledge*. This is the increase. This is the process by which the Word (Seed) of God is born again. This is the death that the apostle Paul spoke of that every man (seed) is appointed once to die.

The apostle further said that “after this death the judgment.” He also said we are judged by our words. So then, after the seed is planted, it is quickened and becomes a tree. When the tree is fully grown it will produce fruit. This is the death and judgment to which every man (seed / word) is appointed. The fruit of the tree is the evidence (or testimony) of its kind.

Before the planting of a seed and its rebirth (resurrection), it only has a body of a seed, but at judgment time it is the tree and its fruit that will be the judge. This is because we judge a tree by its fruit, but we also judge a seed by its tree.

Planting the seed of Knowledge is required in order to experience Spiritual Enlightenment or the Wisdom of God that is called Revelation Knowledge. The increase is produced by impartation of the Holy Word of God by the Spirit of God -- instead of by the spirit of man or by man’s natural mind. This renewed or changed mind is called the *Christ Mind*. It is the *same mind*, but it has been renewed or regenerated. Some call this process being “born again.” What has literally happened is that one body of knowledge has been replaced with another.

The higher level of Revelation Knowledge (or Holy Word) is Understanding, and *is God*. This is the sacrifice (meat or Living Word of God) that a priest of God is required to offer upon the altar of God for the people.

The Knowledge (Seed) that is harvested out of the fruit of Understanding is the *tithe* that goes back into the ground (your own heart -- the place where you go to “think” and commune with God). You must *continue* cultivating, meditating on it, and watching over it -- lest your carnal mind talk you out of it and

steal it from you. Your carnal mind is the *thief and the robber!* The Wisdom that the seed (tithe) of Knowledge produces out of itself is the offering or sacrifice that we are instructed to offer to God for His approval or acceptance.

It is by the constant application of this Spiritual Knowledge that we build the Holy Temple of God. It is called the Kingdom of God and it is *in* you! When you are not building this Temple (House of God), you are robbing God!

Malachi 3:10 says to “bring the tithes into the storehouse that there may be meat in *mine house*.” What this means is to bring the seed (knowledge) by study and meditation, and God will give the increase (wisdom), which is by Revelation. If you believe the other Scriptures concerning the “house of God” you can only conclude from this verse that this bringing of meat into the house is an inner working of Spirit. *It is not bringing your money to the preacher!* Since the Scriptures are very clear that “ye are the temple of God,” then this cannot mean some kind of house that is a building -- such as a church building made with bricks and mortar! The Scriptures tell us that God does not live in buildings made by man, but that God is a Spirit and dwells in the heart of man in spirit form.

The *tithe* here represents a *seed*. We know that bread is made from *seed*. We also know that once we eat bread, it becomes flesh (meat). Malachi 3:10 says to bring the tithe (bread) into my storehouse (the ground of your heart), and it will be quickened and resurrected; it will be transformed into another form -- meat (or wisdom). Simply put, the seed (bread of Life, or tithe) is the knowledge given by the Son of Man (Jesus), and when consumed, digested, and assimilated, it will be to you wisdom. This is a spiritual work and has absolutely nothing to do with giving money (dollars) to anyone, for any reason!

This is not to say that if you are so inspired to give of your finances to someone that you should not do so. If you are truly led, then by all means, do so. But be absolutely sure you are *truly being led*, and are

not simply being deceived by a smooth-tongued preacher into believing God is requiring you to support the preacher's ministry.

There are those today who are giving themselves titles such as prophet, bishop, apostle, etc, and these would deceive the very elect if it were possible. The very fact that someone is interpreting *any* part of the Scriptures to suggest that God requires you to do any outer, physical task to fulfill the Law of God should tell you that they do not know or have any more Spiritual Understanding than you do -- and perhaps not as much!

Getting back to the truth about tithing: sowing the tithe (seeds of Truth / the Good Word / Knowledge / Bread of Life) into our heart (the garden of God) is only the first step toward a harvest. After the seed have been received into the heart (ground), then you must be diligent to watch over them -- and by meditation and prayer they will come forth out of the ground (lifted up from the earth) into the Light. The now-resurrected Seed is then in a different form and you have now received the Living Word (or Wisdom), which is the risen Christ seed. It is now a blade, and as it continues to grow it will become as a fruit-bearing tree, out of which you will come to *know* Understanding! This is how "the windows of heaven are opened." The windows of heaven are your Eyes of Understanding!

If there is no Understanding in the Temple (or House of God), then there is no Life and therefore no increase. If there is no increase in the investment, which is the measure that God gives to every man, then God is thereby robbed. If the original seed does not produce out of itself a tree, and the tree does not bear fruit whose seed is in itself, then the word (seed) dies in the ground and the tree dies with it. God is robbed of His increase.

Not only is there no increase of the seed sown, but because there was no one in attendance in the garden (your mind), the seed that was intended to give new Life (Wisdom and Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life) simply turned to corruption in the ground. It rotted and passed away! This is what Knowledge without Wisdom means -- Man alone, without the Woman. So

we are admonished to “Get Knowledge and get Wisdom, but with all of our getting -- *get Understanding.*”

The writings in Malachi concerning the *tithe* and *robbing God* are addressed to none other than the *priests of God*. See Malachi 2:1: “And now, O ye priests, this commandment is for you!”

Many are called, but a mighty few are chosen. Only those who have *meat* (Wisdom) in the house of God will be the chosen ones. To be chosen is to be permitted to eat of the Tree of Life forever. Man alone can only produce seed (knowledge, the bread of life), but “man cannot live by bread (knowledge) alone.” There must be some *meat* in the House of God, whose House you are!

The *meat* here is the egg of the Woman (Wisdom). You will notice that the Man reproduces himself by dispersing his seed in the ground (Woman), but the Woman does not have seed (bread) in her womb (storehouse); rather, she has eggs (meat). So then, the man should leave all and be *joined* to the woman (his wife) and bring forth children unto God. These children are the Knowledge of the Holy, which is, in fact, *Understanding* (the increase). In this manner God is *not* robbed!

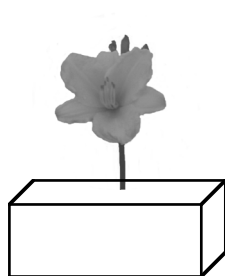
The offspring or increase of the man (Bread of Life), when coupled with the woman (Meat of the Word), is Eternal Life. All of this is the working of the Holy Spirit within the heart of man, which is the building of the Kingdom of God. In this way, O ye priest, you will not rob God (yourself)!

To the reader:

If this chapter has spoken to your heart, and you now understand the tithing process that has been discussed here, I would suggest giving a copy to your minister. *It may be just the help he or she needs!*



***Except a grain of wheat is planted in the ground -- where  
it experiences death to its original form -- it  
remains alone in a state of lifeless inactivity.  
In this state a seed is unprofitable!***





## Chapter 11

### **THE DEATH, BURIAL, AND RESURRECTION** **OF THE SEED CALLED SOUL**

In the earthly realm, Man operates on three levels of consciousness. This may be easily explained and understood by giving you a *word picture*. Let us look at three different stages of a kernel of corn: first, the kernel; second, the stalk; and third, the full corn in the ear.

Okay, let's look at and imagine that the kernel of corn -- *before* it is planted -- is what we will call *man's knowledge*. Let's also look at and imagine the stalk (*after* the kernel has been planted and germinated), and we will call it *man's wisdom*. Lastly, let us see the full, mature ear of corn on the stalk, and we will call it *man's understanding*. We could also call these three the seed, the tree, and the fruit.

Remember now that we are looking at the Soul while it is taking its earthly journey. At the stage when it is emerging from the beastly nature and consciousness into the nature and mind of Man, it is very fragile, confused, and at times, violent. The Soul's mind (Man's mind) at this stage is very limited in its ability to think and can only operate from a carnal, earthly, sensual and very unstable position. Man's knowledge, wisdom, and understanding are one thing on one day, and the next day they are something else. In one country or culture, he believes and therefore expresses himself one way, and in another country or culture he may express himself in an altogether different way.

While this transformation in consciousness from the beastly kingdom to the Kingdom of Man is taking place, men look upon each other as infidels or devils, or whatever else comes to mind. They do this while

justifying their own behaviors -- whatever they may be or however extreme they are. The Soul stays in this condition until the dispensation of the Kingdom of Man is nearing its end, when it will begin to experience emergence into Christ Mind.

In its unenlightened state, the Soul is extremely rebellious and capable of doing great harm to other Souls, just as beasts do to each other. Hatred and deception are the Soul's trademarks in this state. It incarnates and reincarnates many, many times before it is ready to accept any idea of a higher plane of Understanding. The Soul is a wretched and miserable entity while in this lower realm of consciousness. The truth is, in this state we could say that it is actually asleep or unconscious, totally oblivious to its True Nature.

Let us take a look at the chicken inside of a fertilized egg. While it is being formed into a full-fledged chicken, at any stage of its gestation period one could look at the egg's outer appearance and observe very little difference in the way it looks compared to the way other unfertilized eggs in the nest look. But, oh yes, much is happening *inside the egg that is about to be a chicken* that the other eggs don't know about. There is much activity, movement, and change going on *inside the hatching egg* that the unfertilized eggs can never know.

Look at the caterpillar who decides he wants to be a butterfly. After he has completely wrapped himself within the cocoon by his own choosing and by the labor of his own hand, can you imagine the thoughts he must think from the time the last bit of his enclosure is finished until the time he flies away in a whole new form and mind? This too is a picture of Soul's (or Man's) journey to become what it was created to be. There are many, many crooks, turns, hills, and valleys along the path that leads to Spiritual Enlightenment -- which is the Soul's ultimate destiny.

I once gave a lecture entitled "'I Want to Be a Butterfly,' said the Worm." The truth is that what the "worm" (or caterpillar) really wanted, deep down inside, was *to be free*. Perhaps the worm did

not really know that the real reason for his desire *to be a butterfly* was that being a butterfly is what his Divine design calls for in the first place.

Just like you and me, I am certain that the caterpillar never had any idea of what all was involved in really becoming a butterfly! I can imagine that once the realization of what he had undertaken really dawned on him, he must have had some second thoughts. But once he had completely enclosed himself in his cocoon -- without any doors or windows and no way to yell to the other caterpillars for help -- then it was too late to change his mind!

Now, let's just take a minute to reflect on this caterpillar. He really has gotten himself in a pickle. He can't go back, he can't get out, and he can't imagine how all of this metamorphosis is going to take place. I can just hear his thoughts: "What have I done to myself? How will this ever end? Did I really hear right when a voice deep down inside of me said, 'Cover yourself with mud and you can become a butterfly'? Am I losing my mind, or have I already lost it?!"

I am sure that just like you and I, he heard many little voices inside himself, chiding him and chirping in his ear all sorts of negative things (thoughts). I am sure there were times when he said to himself, "Oh my! Suppose I was wrong! Suppose it was just my imagination? Why are there no fossils or witnesses from other worms that provide evidence as to how *they* became a butterfly? Oh yes, I see the butterflies flying and flitting around, but how do I know that they were ever a worm like me?"

After carefully considering all of these thoughts, the caterpillar's final conclusion is: "Well, there are only two choices that I have: I can give up and die, and my cocoon will be my grave, or I can hang on to my *hope* and believe that *I really can and will* become a butterfly."

You see, the caterpillar had both the *mind* and tools to build the

cocoon, but it is going to take the *mind of a butterfly* to get out! Given his predicament, he must conclude that *only* trust, hope, patience, and God will determine his fate. He has completed the *work of his own hands*, so to speak. He has done everything he knew to do, and the rest is up to God -- wherever and whatever “God” is -- to bring forth the final work.

This is a perfect picture of the *dark night of the Soul*. After many, many incarnations it will come to a point when the desire to be *free* will be greater than the desire to continue to crawl around in the dust of ignorance. The Soul will wrap itself in the Word of God and the Spirit of God will quicken it and give it new Life and meaning.

The Truth *will* set you free from all types of bondage created through many incarnations. This bondage was caused by being exposed to and indoctrinated with all manner of negative and perverted teachings over eons of time, in every imaginable condition -- causing massive confusion to the Soul. You truly can and will become a *butterfly*, experiencing freedom through the knowledge of Truth, *if you so choose*. But growing wings and flying away to safety and freedom will come at a price, however.

The very first thing one must give up is the *need and desire for other people's approval*. One must determine that the *only* thing that really matters is that he *earn* the approval of God Itself -- through his obedience to the leading of the Voice of Spirit within himself. He must not run behind every preacher that comes along and professes to be a “prophet of God” or some other supposed “spiritual authority.”

In order for Soul to experience its metamorphosis, in you there must be a made-up mind -- never wavering! You must never faint in your mind! Never give up! Never listen to anyone (the “chirpers”) who would try to discourage you. Never compromise yourself when it comes to your Soul's best interests. Never, ever measure yourself and your progress by what someone else seems or appears to be achieving in their journey. Remember: the

hatching egg looks almost just like the dead and dormant eggs that are in the nest with it!

If you ever look on anyone as having achieved a spiritual goal, with a desire in your heart *to be like him (or her)*, first of all make double sure that the person “walks the walk” and not just “talks the talk.” Make double sure that he or she *always* encourages you and *never* discourages and / or criticizes you. Be sure his or her motives are always to pick you up and exalt *you*, and not himself or herself. This is the true sign that you should look for in anyone who you look to for help or counsel concerning your spiritual well-being. Never, never lower your standards for anyone!

Deceivers come in all sizes, colors, and genders. They can be rich or poor, educated or uneducated. They can be from any cultural or ethnic background, or of any religious or political persuasion -- you name it. So as the saying goes, “be *dumb* like a fox” and always *try the spirit* to see if it is of man (earthly) or of God (heavenly).

The earthly Soul (Man) must make its full journey. It must do so by using its earthly knowledge, wisdom, and understanding. At the point, time, and place when it is ready to elevate its level of consciousness to a higher level purpose and plan, proper and adequate help will be provided. When you are tired of eating dirt and waiting for the next big foot to come along and smash you again, then you are getting close to being ready to experience what the apostle Paul referred to as the “death, burial, and resurrection.”

Following are some Scripture references concerning this death, burial and resurrection. I suggest that you read them in their entirety, however I will only use excerpts from each reference.

Read Romans 6:1-11. Verse 5 says, “For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection.” Let us look at it this way: what the Scripture here is really saying is that whatever kind of seed you plant is the same kind that will be quickened and resurrected in newness of

life -- but in a new *form*. The seed has put off its first form while in the earth, but in the resurrection it put on the form of a tree. No more is it alone (as a seed); now it is a fruit-bearing tree whose seed are many and within itself.

John 12:23-33 is another Scripture that addresses this same subject. Verse 24 says, “Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.” Here Jesus described the Soul’s metamorphic experience as a grain of wheat that must fall into the ground and die in order to live.

You need to understand that what we are referring to by using the label or name “Soul” has also been given many other titles and names. Some of these are: word, flesh, man, son of man, seed, truth, and a myriad of others. What we are describing here concerning the death, burial, and resurrection is the Eternal Seed (Word, or Voice) that descended into the lower realm of Man’s consciousness. We understand that unless a seed is willing to shed its present form and go through the process of the metamorphic experience, then it is unwilling to express itself in the form of a fruit-bearing (Life-bearing) tree.

This is also seen in the caterpillar who wants to be a butterfly. The caterpillar must “die” by putting off its present form and nature in order for it to receive a *new body* and a *new nature* -- but it does not truly *die*.

You will notice that in each example we have here of the experiences of death, burial, and resurrection, the transformation takes place while each seed, caterpillar, or Soul is in the “secret place” (the *grave*) alone. *In the case of the Soul, the physical body is the grave.*

In Luke 8:5-11 we have yet another example of the seed and its planting. Verse 11 says, “Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.” This verse tells us what kind of seed we are sowing

and therefore what kind of seed will be resurrected. All trees (wisdom) come out of seed (knowledge). All *fruit* (understanding) comes out of the combination of the seed and the tree (knowledge and wisdom), be it earthly fruit (of Man / Soul), or heavenly fruit (of God / Spirit). The seed (Word) must be born again!

In I Corinthians 1:19 we read, “For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.” This verse leaves no doubt as to why the seed (Word) in us must be resurrected to newness of Life. If we only have the knowledge, wisdom, and understanding of man, we have nothing!

As long as Man (Soul) operates in his earthly, carnal, sensual state of consciousness, he can *never know God or Himself!* Reason and logic are two great and wonderful attributes of Man, and it is natural for him to seek their counsel. As long as he remains in the lower state of consciousness, he will be guided by them. But in God-Consciousness, reason and logic *support* the Spirit Mind, rather than lording over It.

In the lower realm, reason and logic always usurp authority because the carnal, natural mind is “Boss.” The Spirit Mind of God is never allowed to operate as Boss. Therefore Man will continue to operate in fear, confusion, and uncertainty -- instead of confidence, peace, and love.

We began this chapter with the idea of the death, burial, and resurrection of a seed. We then looked at how a kernel of corn is transformed into a full corn in the ear. We also discussed the planting (burial) of a seed -- that it is resurrected as a tree that bears fruit whose seed is in itself. We called the seed *knowledge*, the tree *wisdom*, and the seed within the fruit *understanding*. But it is important to remember that what we have discussed up to this point are only *man's* knowledge, man's wisdom, and man's understanding. We must also attain to God Knowledge, God Wisdom, and God Understanding.

Given all of the examples we have discussed, we must see the seed not as corn or a fruit tree, but as a Soul -- the Word of God. We have seen in the Scriptures that the seed (the Word of Truth) is the Knowledge of God. This gives us a clear understanding that the death, burial, and resurrection of a Soul is, in fact, the death, burial, and resurrection of the Knowledge (Seed) of Truth that a person can receive in his consciousness, or heart.

In the exact same manner that the seed is resurrected as a tree and the seed is glorified in the fruit of the tree, so also will the Word of God be resurrected when planted in a pure heart. The Word of God (which in the seed form is Knowledge) will be resurrected in the tree form as Wisdom, out of which will come Understanding (the fruit or increase resulting from the death and resurrection). This will only occur, however, if we receive *the Knowledge of Truth* in the ground of our heart, nurture it to bring forth the Tree of Wisdom, and receive the increase in the form of Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life -- whereby we receive eternal Life. *This* Knowledge (or Seed) of the Law of the Spirit of Life is the "Knowledge of the Holy." This is the Knowledge of God which are the Living Seed that are held within the Fruit of the Spirit. This Fruit of the Spirit is the Understanding of Wisdom.

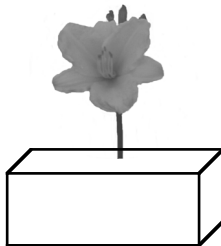
My prayer for you is that you will hasten to your "burial," so you may experience your *Resurrection* -- and with patience and expectation wait for the increase, which is *Understanding*!

"Get Knowledge, and get Wisdom, but with all thy getting, get Understanding" -- because the Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life is the *only* source of Eternal Life!





***The Lord searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the  
imaginations of the thoughts. If thou seek him,  
he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him,  
he will cast thee off forever.***



## Chapter 12

### **REALIZATION VERSUS IMAGINATION**

*Realization* is that which *is*, and *imagination* is that which *is not*. That which is realized to be *real* is the only thing that will not, at some future time, change -- and therefore any imagined benefit derived from that which is *not* real will not last. Only that which is really real will never change or pass away!

We only have two things to consider. The first is to *know* that which is real and can therefore never fade away. The second is to *sever from our conscious mind* all things that are not real, but are in fact *images* created by false beliefs.

When I use the phrase “conscious mind,” I do not mean one who is “Consciously Aware of Being Conscious.” There are three different states of Soul expression while it is expressing in the Kingdom of Man. We will discuss these shortly. Once a person has awakened sufficiently to the point where he is *Consciously Aware of Being Conscious*, he is then able to begin the process that will enable him to ascend to the next level of enlightenment on his journey toward God Consciousness. God Consciousness will afford him entrance into the Kingdom of God. This is how the awakening process takes place.

While in a state of *awakening*, but not yet fully awake, a person’s conscious awareness is limited. While this process is unfolding, he will resort to his faculties of reason and logic in his decision making. As a result of following the counsel of reason and logic he will reach a place in consciousness where he will be *wise in his own eyes*. There will be others who know him who will also judge him to be shrewd and wise. Of course, only those who are

themselves in a less-awakened state would judge him in this state to be *truly wise*! Anyone who is in the Fully Awakened State will always easily identify anyone who is not Fully Awake, however.

All Souls on planet Earth are occupying their bodies in one of three stages. The Soul is either asleep (unconscious of Self); awake but not yet Conscious of Being Conscious; or lastly, in the state that each Soul should have as a priority -- having had the ultimate experience of being *fully, consciously Self Aware*. Some call this third state “Self Realization.” Until Self Realization has been experienced, the Soul has no idea of Who or What it is. It certainly has not the foggiest idea of what its purpose is. How could it possibly know its purpose, not knowing Who or What it is?

If you were to walk down the street and talk to ten people, asking each of them the three questions that follow, you would get a different answer from each. Their answers would differ depending on if they are yet in a state of sleep, in the state between being asleep and fully awake, or Self Realized. Here are the three questions:

Question Number One:	<i>Who</i> are you?
Question Number Two:	<i>What</i> are you?
Question Number Three:	<i>What</i> is your purpose for being?

Let us start with number one: “*Who* are you?” All sleeping Souls believe themselves to be their body and that they are merely *mortal* and helpless human beings who are at the mercy of circumstances, having no ability to do anything to bring about any meaningful change. They think they are here “until their time is up.” If they are religious, they will expect to go to paradise, heaven, or hell. If they are not religious, they say, “When you are dead, you’re dead.”

Now to question number two, “*What* are you?” Here you will receive a myriad of answers. Most often the first response will be a question that might sound something like this: “What do you

mean, ‘*What* am I?’ Can’t you see I’m a man (or a woman)? What a dumb question!”

You will meet but a very few to whom you will ask this second question (unless they are Self-Realized) who have ever even raised the question in their own mind. It has never occurred to most people to ask themselves, “Who am I? What am I? Do I have a purpose? If I have a purpose, what is it?”

Of course, when you ask the third question, “*What* is your purpose?” there will always be mixed reactions and responses. But once again, without Spiritual Awakening (Self Realization) it would be utterly impossible for a person to know his purpose or be able to rightly answer even one of the three questions.

At the moment a Soul begins to ask itself these three very important and primary questions, *that Soul is ready for the journey out of darkness* (the sleep state) into the Light. There will, of course, be countless other questions that will follow these first three, but each and every one of them *must and can* be answered. There will be *no* questions that will go unanswered when the Soul’s desire to know Itself is greater than the will to remain ignorant.

This entire planet is run by people who are, for all intents and purposes, asleep. They are unconscious and unaware of themselves and therefore they are unconcerned about the purpose for anything. They simply get out of bed every morning and go about their business of the day, whatever it may be. For the most part they are “on automatic.”

Were you to ask most people at the end of the day, “What did you do today?” they would need to stop and think, “What *did* I do today?” After reflecting back, they would only remember a minute part of their activities of the entire day, and remember even less of what they were *thinking on* during the day. About the only thought of the day they would be able to recall would be some “big” thought that left a *mark* on their memory -- usually something negative or unpleasant.

Distasteful things and negative thoughts are always easy to be remembered and the unenlightened mind has no difficulty in recalling them. The so-called “negative” things are the only things in the life of the sleeper that are real! In a state of unenlightened Beingness, one has no conscious awareness of Self (that is, the *real* Self), therefore it is impossible for him to be consciously aware of what *really is*. If one exists in a state wherein he has no conscious Self-awareness, then how can there be any Self-consciousness or consciousness of any part of Reality?

When a person remembers having had a dream, most of the time he will not be able to recall what the dream was -- only that he had a dream. This is the only thing that can be produced by a person existing in a state of imagination. The only things he has to refer to are images. Since he was born out of his mother’s womb in this state and remains so, one could correctly say that his existence (most often referred to as “life”) in this unconscious state is nothing more than a dream. His existence is as someone acting in a great play, simply playing a part in the fictitious plot.

When one has no Reality of Self, there cannot be any reality of anything else. Of course, all of Soul’s experiences are “real” to the *unrealized Self*. The self, though, that is the one playing the part in the play, is only a make-believe self. It is playing the part of fiction and has been given a fictitious character, name and identity because Soul has lost its *True Self Identity!*

All Souls remain in this state until the day dawns and the Souls experience a real sunrise (Son-rise) in their consciousness and a true remembrance of their True Self. When they awaken out of their very long sleep (called “the dark night of the Soul”) they *realize* for the first time since they ate of the tree of the knowledge of evil that they must reacquaint themselves with *Truth* and *Reality*. They must begin searching for the answers to the three most important questions: *who am I, what am I, and what is my purpose?* As I have previously stated, there will come a myriad

of other questions *behind* these, but once these three questions are answered, as the saying goes, “*the rest is a piece of cake!*”

The journey of the Soul from imagination to Realization is the destiny of all Souls. The purpose of the journey of the Soul is to create for itself a tangible, Eternal Physical Body that it can express itself *in and through* on all planes of the Universes! Until Soul is sufficiently enlightened, it does not have the ability to create this Eternal Light Body of Substance.

The Soul is Spirit, and so is everything else that has a beingness. This is true even though it is often said that the physical body is flesh and not Spirit. *It is all Light* -- Light that was not created and had no beginning. Light Itself created a form out of Itself and called it Soul. Light's first expression in tangible form was in the form of *water*. Light is the beginning and the end of all things that are and that have a beingness. Even those things that are waiting to become or express in some type of form are *Light!*

In this Light (God) *is all Consciousness and Life*. Out of Itself came all that *is*; whether in some form or not yet formed, it is *all the same thing!* Itself *begot* Itself, *by* Itself, and gave purpose and form *to* Itself, *through* Itself! God (Light) truly *is* all and *in* all! Light -- Itself -- is truly The One!

Once this realization dawns upon Soul's sleeping Self, the *Real Self* will emerge. Then that which was once only playtime and fiction will be revealed as such by the Spirit of Wisdom, the Great Universal Mind. Reality will once again be realized by Soul. Eternal Life shall express Itself *as It really is* -- no longer believing Itself to be the character in the play, with a personality (persona) that is only imagined by the one who is having the dream.

The You that *is You* is Spirit and Light. It is expressing in form as a Soul (Man). The purpose for Itself to express in form is to house Itself *in Itself* for Its own purpose and pleasure, and from this vantage point work the work of creation.

All mysteries and mysticism are but part of the delusion. All belief in *any* limitation is also part of the myth. For one to believe that there could be any limitations associated with the Real Self is to deny *Itself*. If Man (Soul) is in the express likeness of God (Light), then where would the limitations come from, since we understand God to be everywhere present and have *no* limitations whatsoever? The only possible source for this erroneous belief, then, is the imaginary state of delusion and fiction.

If one will accept (believe) this as *Truth*, then the only thing left to *do* is to *prove it*. But someone might inquire, “How can I prove this?” The desire to know Truth will be your guiding Light. It *will* show you the way. Desire is also the fuel needed for the trip.

No one can take this trip for another Soul, as some religious teachings would have you believe. Anyone who is able to correctly interpret the Spiritually-inspired biblical writings can only conclude this to be the only purpose of the writings in the first place. For biblical writings to have any other purpose would make them unprofitable and worthless, since *the only need Man (or Soul) has is to experience Self Realization*, and to thereby express his True Nature while in the earthly form state! Soul must at some point remember its True Identity while yet in the Kingdom of Man in order for it to ascend -- to evolve into the state of God Consciousness and enter into the Kingdom of God.

One can only *realize* that which is *real* in the moment of *Self Realization and God Realization*. Then that which is *real* is *realized*! Up to this point, everything only seemed to be real, but one has had no proof of its reality and therefore has had no *Self evidence*! The only undeniable, irrefutable evidence or proof of one’s Self-existence, or of existence itself, is to experience Self Realization. All else is but an imagination or a dream -- a hope, or perhaps hearsay. But at the point of one’s Conscious Awareness of being Conscious, Self becomes conscious of *Itself* for the first time since it began to believe in another power outside of *Itself*. Then, and then only, can one say with certainty, “*I am.*”



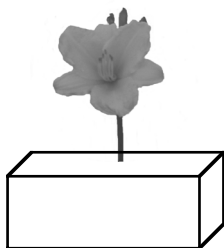
The declaration of the I Am Self can only affirm the thing that It is! The Light, Consciousness, and Life of the Self are the *only ones* that can declare Itself to Be, and therefore be empowered to resoundingly say, “I AM.”

We have now come to the last act of the play. It is time for the curtain to go up for the last time! The drama has been long and arduous. It is now time to shut the doors of perception. It is time for the True Self, Itself, to step onto the stage and acknowledge that It has not only been the only one in the play, playing all of the parts of each character and taking on all of the many personalities, but in fact It is the screen writer, composer, and stage director. It is the producer, make-up artist, costume designer, prop manufacturer and casting director. It was and is all things that were involved, from start to finish, in the making of this great movie called “Life On Earth”!

Now you realize that *you have always been where you were going*. Now that the doors of perception are, in fact, once and for all closed, you have at this point of Conscious Self Awareness entered into Eternal Life -- *where you were all the time!* NOW THERE IS ONLY REALIZATION WHERE ONCE THERE WAS ONLY IMAGINATION.

May the Great Spirit, the Eternal Light, the Source of all Life, assist each Soul to find the *True Self, Itself!*

***Set my Spirit free!  
It is the nature of a Soul to be  
free and uninhibited.***



## Chapter 13

### **LET FREEDOM REIGN**

Belief in limitation equals incarceration. Belief in insufficiency is very inhibiting. Lack and limitation are words that really mean the same thing. One cannot identify with lack and not at the same time be enclosed or penned in by a wall that inhibits his freedom. Any sense of belief in any limitation -- anywhere, at anytime, in any area of one's being -- says, "I am bound; I am a prisoner." Belief in limitation says, "I cannot; I don't have; I don't know; I am restrained; I am not free; and I am prevented in some way from doing or having the thing I desire to do or have."

Belief in lack and limitation creates within one a victim mentality. Since Souls became conscious of themselves in their journey toward the Light, people from all walks of life have believed themselves to be victims. They believe themselves to be victimized by a person or group or by society in general. Some believe themselves to be victims as a result of the experiences of past generations! This mentality and belief system is the direct result of mankind becoming a victim by his very own hand. Through mysticism and imagination man inflicts upon himself the wounds and dis-ease that he experiences while he travels earth's journey.

Any belief in *any* limitation or lack in *any* area at all is a confession of bondage and a *denial of Sonship*. In acknowledging one's True Identity, he acknowledges his true Sonship. The Son will always believe in his heart and confess by the words of his mouth that he has access to, and is in fact an heir to all things in existence! He is heir to all things that are seen or unseen; visible or invisible; whether in the heavens above or in the earth beneath. Belief in lack and insufficiency goes against the *nature of Soul*. *It*

*is the nature of Soul to be free and uninhibited.* Realization of freedom (Truth) breaks the chains of unbelief. Realization of Truth causes any sense of lack and limitation to melt like a snowflake in a burning furnace -- in the same way that the appearance of darkness flees when one turns on the light!

Either a person is *totally* free or *he is not!* One cannot be in prison and free at the same time. *True* freedom truly sets the captive free. The walls that held captive the prisoner are broken down. When the gates of the prison are opened and the prisoner actually exits the prison, then that which was once his limitation -- which once held him captive -- no longer has any legal hold on him. Once the guilty party has served his time and the law has been satisfied that sent him to prison, then he no longer owes any debt to anyone for the crime committed. He no longer owes any debt to the enforcers of the law.

You see, no one ever serves prison time for the crime he has committed. No, the time served is done *to satisfy the Law* that says, "Thou shalt not." The power to incarcerate one for a crime committed does not lie in the commitment of the crime, but rather the power to punish and incarcerate lies within *the Law*. We need to understand that the one who commits the crime has no power whatsoever. All authority and power is in the hand (mind) of the judge, the jury, and the executioner of the Law. For those of you who are Bible students, you may refer to Romans 8:1-2 for another look at this subject.

When an offence is committed, the offender gives up not only his authority and power *in* the Law, but he also forfeits the protection he had *by* the Law, as long as he lived within its parameters. When one keeps, honors, obeys and abides by the Law of the Spirit of Life, it will always provide him with complete and absolute *freedom*. *There is no limitation or lack in the life of one who is a keeper of this Law!* Lack and limitations only apply to the *Law breakers!*

Prison guards and door keepers are always free to *come* and *go* in and out of the prison. The prisoner, however, must stay within

the walls, behind locked doors -- ruled over by the keepers of the prison until he has paid his just penalty or debt. Having forfeited his rights as a free citizen by his disregard for the Law, the prisoner is bound hand and foot and locked behind closed doors. He has sacrificed his freedom, and any access to his goods is shut off.

He is now shut off from everyone and everything, and being alone, he reflects upon *what* he did. In doing so, he loses self-respect and self-esteem and labors under a load of guilt and condemnation. He cannot find a way to satisfy his guilt. He can, by the sacrifice of his freedom, satisfy the Law, but even after he has paid his debt to society he cannot find within himself the ability to forgive himself.

The reason he cannot forgive himself and free himself from within -- even though he has paid his legal debt -- is because he has not been able to answer the big question: "Why? Why did I do this thing?" He tries to justify himself for committing the crime by blaming others, blaming society, or blaming family members. But the more he tries to justify himself, the more guilt and condemnation rages within him -- even though society has forgiven him, the Law has been satisfied by his full payment of his debt, and the Law no longer finds him guilty of any crime. *He still cannot, however, find the place within himself to set himself free, by forgiving himself!*

He was a prisoner of the Law and the society or country wherein the Law was in force, but he now is a prisoner *of himself!* He desperately tries to find the key to unlock the doors of guilt and condemnation, but because of his persistent attempt to justify himself (or find himself innocent) by blaming or accusing or incarcerating others, he cannot find his own door of freedom.

The following provides the light for the one who is searching for the door to freedom. The moment a person will assume full responsibility for his own behavior and *stop attempting to justify himself by accusing or finding fault with others* -- or by any other means of self-justification -- at that moment that person is able

and ready to forgive himself! It is by forgiving others or finding all others innocent that one is able to find *true Self forgiveness, and thereby find Self to be innocent.*

Once *Self* has set *Self* free from condemnation and guilt from the deeds of the past, then held within Self-forgiveness -- not self justification -- is the *Key* to not only true freedom, but this same key opens and gives the owner of the Key access to the world of *no lack*. Once again the heir has regained or reclaimed his Sonship! His record is clean, the Law has been satisfied, and now the Son of the Most High God receives his true inheritance. He now realizes that this whole life experience was only a dream. Many times, it had been a horrendous nightmare.

In this Now-Awakened and Conscious state, the former Lawbreaker is now the Lawmaker. He is filled with gratitude to awaken out of the long night of turmoil, guilt, condemnation, hatred, jealousy, envy, strife, and accusations. Pain and all manner of sufferings are no more! *The reality of the non-reality of it all* fills his heart with an awesome sense of thanksgiving and love for Life, as he is now literally swimming in the precious peace that comes with Truth and freedom.

Because the prodigal son has now returned to his Father's house and once again enjoys and experiences true Sonship, only one thing remains for him to do; there is only one desire left unfulfilled in his heart. This awesome, burning desire takes sleep from his eyes and hunger from his stomach, and it takes away all real desire for anything else. Only one thing remains to be done, and this is his earnest and sincere prayer: *that I may be an instrument used by the Great Spirit of Life and Light to help other Souls awaken out of their nightmare of misery. My prayer is that they may come on home to the Father's house and reacquaint themselves with the benefits of their true Sonship.*

*When one awakens to the reality of his true Sonship, he will know the truth -- that he never really left the Father's house, except in*

*the dream!* All along he was safe -- not only in his Father's house, but safe and warm in his Father's bed!

Awake out of your slumber! *Oh Man, know Thyself!*

There is no thought of lack or limitation in our Father's House -  
- in our Country wherein we are *true citizens*.

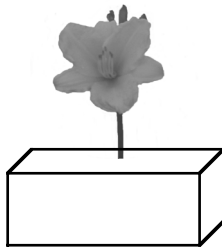
In Matthew 6:31-32, the Master Jesus said, "Take no thought, saying What shall we eat, or what shall we drink, or wherewithal shall we be clothed?" This is the mind of the Gentile, and it has lack and limitation as its belief system. This is not the mind of a *True Jew*! A True Jew is one whose mind has been renewed by the Spirit of God.

When one recovers his true Self Identity, he also realizes that his true Nature and Citizenship are Spirit and Truth. Therein is no thought of lack or limitation. This is the land of *more than enough!* *By simply using the key of forgiveness -- first to forgive Self and then to forgive all others -- we are set at liberty and true freedom reigns.*

*Life and death are in the power of the tongue.*

*The tongue of the wise useth knowledge aright:  
but the mouth of fools poureth  
out foolishness.*

*A fool's mouth is his destruction, and his lips  
are the snare of his soul.*





## Chapter 14

### TALK THE TALK

There can never, ever be a true *Faith walk* until there is true *Faith talk*!

When a person aligns his thinking and his speaking with the Word of God, he then begins the Faith walk. This requires an individual to change his vocabulary -- to learn to speak with a new tongue, even while guarding his mouth. It is the mouth that sets into motion the Law of the universe, the *Law of Creation*.

You create your own circumstances in the following manner. First, what you entertain as a thought will become what makes up the content of the heart. The heart is the place where you gather words to make a sentence and therefore a statement. As you think or meditate on a thought, it becomes a picture -- a *thing* taking shape in your mind. Then, as you express or articulate the *thing* thought on, it is given *sound and kind*. It is clothed by the *feelings* of the speaker at the time it is put together and is sent out by way of words (voice). The source of the thought or idea determines the *quality* of the idea. In addition, the *feelings* the one with the idea has toward the thought are determined by its source. The vibrational frequency of the person *speaking* is also determined by the source of the idea or thought that preceded the word spoken.

All men live or die by the words of their mouth! The mouth is the site of construction or the site of destruction; in other words, it is the site of Life or death. When you align your mouth *with* the Law of Life -- you *live* by it. When you align your mouth against or contrary to the Law of Life -- you *die* by it. The *words* of your mouth are as a two-edged sword.

You live or die by the *same* law. There really is only one law -- the Law of the Spirit of Life. When you live in agreement with it, *you live*. When you conduct your life in disagreement with it, *you die*.

When you read the Bible concerning this subject, at times or in certain ways that it is phrased, it appears to be talking about two laws: the Law of Life and the law of death. The Scriptures, however, are not talking about two laws, because the *one* Law of Life is the only active force in the universe. When you are in compliance with *it*, *it* provides you with everything pertaining to Life and Peace. When you are not in compliance with it, the consequence is automatic.

There is no one or any other source of action enforcing the supposed *other* "law of death." To the degree you break the Law of Life, it will break you; it is not some *other* law, but rather the self-same *one* Law that is the source of *Life* and *death*. It is the one tongue (voice) that is wielding both edges of the one sword. By the right use of this Law, anyone can and will defeat every enemy -- *every thought of failure and defeat*.

By *disagreeing* with Life, victory, and winning, you are *agreeing* with death, failure, and defeat. When you are consciously aware of speaking contrary to Peace and Life, you can try to explain your way out, or try to justify or give reasons why you said what you said in any case or situation -- *but once the words have gone out of your mouth, you cannot change their quality or character*.

So *think* before you *think* on anything negative or that which has even a hint of failure -- because negative thinking does not have God, or Life, as its source! Do not ever allow such a thought to come into your house (your heart), and thereby you will shut off the possibility of it going out of your mouth. Truly, out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaks.

It is not what goes into you that defiles, defeats and destroys your crop, but rather it is what comes out of your mouth that does all

of the damage. You are a Self-contained entity. By way of thought, meditation, and speaking, your words stand as the *only* creative force in your world or in your universe! As a man thinketh in his heart, *so is he*.

If you *think* on words (things) that give Life, then you *speak* words of Life -- and you *get* Life! Just the opposite is true when you *think* and *speak* words (things) that give death.

No, I am not teaching man's doctrine of "Name it and claim it." When you name it, *you don't have to claim it*, because it is *already* yours! It is already your child with your mark upon it. It has your DNA in it, and on it is *your name*! It knows its *mother* (your heart) and its *father* (the spirit that sired it), and it knows the womb that gave it birth (your mouth). It will in time return to the place it was sent out from with the "work" done that it was sent out to do. Whether constructive or destructive, your words *work* for you!

The Bible tells us that by our words (works) we will be or are judged -- we are found just (or justified), or by our words we are condemned to death. The *words* that we speak are not the issue here, but rather the quality or kind of spirit that sired these children (our words). The *kind* determines the *quality*. The quality determines the *outcome*. By your words you increase the quality of your life or you decrease it. This truth is not some religious idea, cliché, or gimmick. This is the *Law of the Universe* -- and it works *all* the time, for *everyone*!

As I have pointed out, the source of your knowledge determines the quality of your creation. This source also determines whether or not your creation will abide forever or be temporal and soon vanish. *You alone* are the one to determine this outcome. "God" - - as most people view God -- has absolutely nothing to do with it!

To the degree you break the Law of Life and prosperity with your mind (thought), heart (meditation) and mouth (speaking), to that degree *it will break you*. This Law can *never* change. This

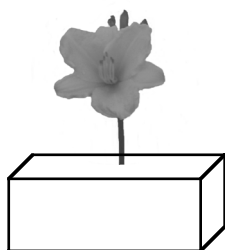
Law can *never* fail! It cannot be manipulated. It *can* be disbelieved, *but this disbelief has no power to change it*. This is the *Way of creation!*

Through the *spoken word* all things were and are made -- whether the word was spoken by the god of this world (the spirit of man) or by the God of Love (the Spirit of Truth and Life). The latter is the power of the creation of Life, Peace, and Prosperity, and it is the invisible Substance from which all things in heaven and earth are and were created and take form. It was so in the beginning, is now, and will always be!

*This Law is **in force** -- and this Law **is** the force!*



***You can be yourself better than you could  
ever hope to be someone else.***



## Chapter 15

### THE PLAY GOES ON

It has been said that earth is a stage and that each must play a part. It has also been said that earth is the school of the Gods. There is much more truth here than most of mankind knows or would ever suspect. Some have likened man's experience here on earth to that of a seemingly never-ending play that is being acted out on life's stage. However the few people who do ever give any thought to this idea at all, do so in a very matter-of-fact or shallow manner. The thought of the possibility of this idea having any reality seems to them to be frivolous and child's play.

The fact is, Man (or Soul) is -- *literally* -- acting in a play, and is *literally* in training to become a Son of God. Just as a son-of-man becomes a man, so too will every Son-of-God become fully God Incarnate. Man is himself the character in the play and he himself is nothing more than an *image* or imagination in the Mind of Spirit. Mankind is blinded by the fictional nature of the many roles he plays and the costumes he wears, and he knows not the purpose of the play or how it will end.

As long as an actor continues acting, the play goes on. The actor cannot act his way out of the act or play as long as he continues to identify with the role or the part of the play he agreed to perform. Therefore, the play will continue!

The fictional character's nature and personality are the essence of the role the actor is playing. As long as Soul continues to identify with the character that it is portraying as the *I Am*, a state of double mindedness will continue. The *true* I Am can only *be* the I Am that *is*!

The way to identify the one with the fictitious identity is very simple. Any time the “you” that you believe yourself to be needs to consult with or solicit help from another, then the “you” that you believe to be the real you is *the imitator*. This is a dead give away. The one who is asking the questions or is in need of guidance is surely the character or the actor! The *True I Am* is the one with *all* of the answers. The True I Am looks up to none as a greater authority, but rather is the One in the loftiest position that looks down upon and overshadows all.

Man (or Soul) is only an *expression of* the one God Who is the creator of *all things*, and Who is the *only* Source of Life. Man is, however, a Self-contained unit because the *Source* of pure Knowledge and undefiled Wisdom has Its residence within him.

Spirit is the *true* I Am Self. In order for this *true* I Am Self to have a need to consult with or seek counsel from any other, It would have to deny *Itself* as the all-knowing or omniscient One.

The character that is doing all of the role playing is pretending to be something when it is really nothing. Pretence, or acting, is its true nature. It is the one who has denied the true Source of itself by assuming the personality and identity of the character in the play. The imitator is the one in denial. The true I Am Self has not, nor will it ever deny *Itself*. The imitator is the nothingness of the shadow that is portraying itself to be the tree. The tree is not claiming to be the shadow.

Not only has the role player who is the actor in the play assumed the identity he is now playing, but the actor has himself taken on yet *another* identity. In other words, the deceiver has itself become deceived by its own creation and imaginations! The fictional character has descended so far into the deep that it has forgotten that it is but an image or created character, along with its personality and nature. Therefore the actor is now playing even *another* character. This is what Jesus called “the lie and the father of it.” *The allegory begets and gives birth to another allegory!*



Both are nothing more than a shadow! For someone to search or look outside of himself for help is like one shadow seeking help from another shadow! *Neither are anything* -- and therefore only more imagination can come from imaginations.

One cannot hope to get something out of nothing! It would be like a builder trying to cut down the shadow, instead of the tree, to use for building materials. Can a shadow raise itself up from the ground and produce fruit? Of course not! Neither can one fictional character produce Truth or True Reality by creating another fictional character. All of this kind of thinking is total nonsense and comes from vain imaginations.

There is but one true Self Identity. It is the Source of Itself and the Self of Its Source. It is the beginning and ending of Itself. It is Self-sustaining and Self-sufficient. It is Its own Source of *all* things, and *all* things have their Source in It. It need only look *within Itself* for any thing desired -- just as the tree brings forth out of itself its limbs, leaves, flowers, buds and fruit, whose seed is in itself. As the seed produced the tree, and the tree brings forth out of itself everything its design and nature calls for, so also the Seed (or Soul, Word, or Son of Man) has within itself its perfect nature and design. It need not look to another seed or tree to assist in any function called for by its nature and design. It is Self-contained.

The physical earth is the source of all things that exist in this realm. Out of the earth came everything that moves and lives and has its being in the earth's system. Even the rain, dew, sleet, ice, snow, or any other form of moisture that is life-sustaining comes out of the earth's body. The water is drawn up from the earth into the atmosphere (or firmament) by the Sun, and it changes its consistency through self cleansing. It then returns to earth to water the seeds sown in the earth, to assist in giving life to itself and its Source -- which are one and the same. The water returns to its source and the cycle continues.

The physical earth is a replica of the physical body of man. Every human organ, artery, capillary, cell or colony of cells is represented within the physical earth body. Everything the earth needs to sustain and maintain life in itself is *within itself*. So it is with every Soul (Man).

Let us look at the caterpillar. The caterpillar is ugly and is repulsive in its outer appearance. But if one could *see within* the caterpillar, he would first see a blueprint or design for a butterfly. One cannot see the beautiful butterfly that is held within the design, however, nor know its nature, just by looking at the design or blueprint. Unless one first has knowledge of *the transformation process* that will produce the thing the design calls for, he can never conceive of the beauty, nature, and function of the butterfly in its fully-formed state.

Held within the caterpillar is everything needed or desired in order to become *what it already is!* Because it is self-contained, it solicits help from no one. It makes a *decision* within itself and in so doing it declares, “I am going to become who and what my true nature and design is. I am going to manifestly be *what I Am!* No more will I crawl around, *pretending* I am a worm!”

When the caterpillar makes this decision, every decision *that follows* will be in support of this one. The caterpillar then begins to work the work that its true nature calls for, and it begins to put a plan together as to how it will accomplish this. Once the decision is made, the game plan is also determined, and the process or execution of the plan comes about quite naturally. Remember: everything that it is doing or desires to do is in accordance with its own true nature and natural abilities. The gathering together of the materials and the process of spinning and forming its cocoon will both be in accordance with its design.

During the time when all phases of this work are going on, *there is no visible change in the outer appearance of the caterpillar*. Every day he looks the same, but *inside of himself* there is growing

anticipation and excitement as he keeps his focus and attention on the end of his labor and the transformation process -- when he will be able to take his rest and take flight!

Once the caterpillar has completed the building of the enclosure around himself, he is completely shut off from all *outside* activity. The metamorphosis continues from within, and after awhile it begins to affect his outer appearance. Everything he has needed or desired up to this time he has been able to provide for himself. No one has helped in any way. No counsel has been given or solicited. Now, even if he were to think to ask for help, of whom or how would he ask it?

Long before he got to this point in the process of *being who and what he is*, he discovered within himself all the knowledge, wisdom, and ability needed to complete the job! He would have never enclosed himself within the cocoon if he had not *known* that he held within himself the means whereby he could finish the job and emerge from the enclosure! He knew it would be impossible to access any kind of assistance once he had enclosed himself in the cocoon. In fact, the thought of any need for any kind of assistance or attention from any other caterpillar has long since passed. He now knows that it is just *a matter of time* until the process is complete.

While the caterpillar is lying still and quiet, alone and with darkness all around, there is within his innermost Self a brilliant, shining light -- and a burning, flaming desire. *In his patience* he knows he will possess the awaited Treasure. He also knows that he must never give thought to the outer conditions, because if he does so, he will surely faint in his mind. If he changes his inward focus of his energy (or Life Force) that is fueling his burning desire, and redirects his attention to the outer circumstances or appearances, it would be a *grave* mistake. He *knows* that where his attention goes, his energy (or Life Force) flows. So he keeps his mind free from fear, doubt, and unbelief, which would only foster defeat and failure. His focus must remain on the single I

Am. His persistent, conscious state of resting in full confidence, waiting for the fullness of time to come, is his assurance that he will reach his goal. *His harvest shall surely come.*

When the metamorphosis is complete and the butterfly has become *what it is*, its growth and change in form will provide the strength and the ability to break forth from the cocoon and soar like an eagle. No longer is it held in bondage as a caterpillar -- limited to crawling around in the dirt. No longer is it looked upon as a repulsive creature, but it has now joined with those of like kind. It enjoys the freedom *earned* by the works of its own hands and its own true heart's desire! *The will to fly was greater than the will to crawl!* Crawling around in its ugly state and temporary form was never its true nature.

Likewise, it is not the true nature of a *tree* to remain in the form of a *seed*. It is also *not* the true nature of a Soul to remain in a state of role-playing or playing the part of an actor. It is not the true nature of a Soul to imagine itself to be the character in the script. It is, however, the true nature of the actor to imagine himself to be the character he portrays. His need to compete with another character in the same script drives him to continue his role playing.

Just as the caterpillar did, every Soul must at some point reach a decisive moment when it will say within itself, "*I want to be a butterfly, because I Am a butterfly! With my own desire and effort I will bring forth out of myself the Self that I Am!*" In the meantime, the play goes on until the actor decides and declares that the last scene has been acted and the curtain is closed.

The Soul (Man) has remained in this state of consciousness for eons of times. It has played all of the characters in the script, which are many. It has taken on the persona and personality of each character it has played, time after time.

The Soul chooses its own form of expression in each incarnation. It also chooses how, when, where, and how long each role of

each character it assumes will last. The Soul is the only one involved in its decision-making. It is free to write the script, design the costumes (bodies), and create the personality of each character it will play.

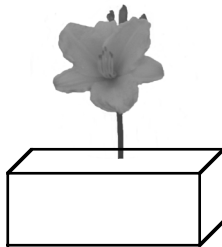
When a Soul awakens out of its stupor or sleep, it will say, “I have had enough of this playing around, pretending to be something that I am *not*.” Much like the caterpillar, it too will say *within* itself, “I am going to be what I Am. By being what I Am, I must cease to believe or pretend to be *what I am not*.”

In order to assume true Self Identity, the Soul must come to the realization of the life of fiction. At this point, the Soul will realize, “*I can be Myself better than I can be someone else!*” It will then begin its journey out of the darkness into the Light. As it begins to put off the created nature and personalities of the myriad of fictional characters it has played for so long, it will, little by little, put on its true, Divine Nature. Its true attributes will once again begin to manifest through its decision-making, behaviors, and all-around dealings in life.

Every Soul has its source in the one Light Divine. Its true nature is Divine. Because of Soul’s lost Self Identity we see the myriad of imaginary characters playing out their chosen roles in planet earth today. *As awful as the drama appears to be, it really is only a portrayal of a fictional play.* In reality, it is all allegories, lies, and deception based purely on imaginations (images), mysticism, and child’s play.

At some point, every single unit of expression (Soul) will *wake up, grow up, and give up* its role in child’s play. But until it does ... *the play will go on!*

***For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption;  
but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap  
LIFE EVERLASTING.***



## Chapter 16

### **IF THOU CANST BELIEVE,** **IT'S ALL IN A SEED!**

Believing, receiving, and conceiving of the *Seed of Truth* eliminates deception. All people on earth, both male and female, need to see the Doctor and allow him to perform on each of them a “D&C” -- a *dilate and cleanse*. The D&C is a scraping or cleaning out of the womb of a woman who may be childless or have an *issue of blood* or some other kind of *dis-ease*.

I am calling the contamination that is causing all of man’s health problems *deception*. Deception is caused by the false doctrines of carnal men that are the fruit of man’s wisdom (man’s spirit or blood). A person operating in deception has not yet experienced *righteous conception*, which is conceiving of the Seed (or Word) of Truth.

There are only three alphabetical letters that are different in the spelling of these two words, deception and conception, but their definitions are very different. One holds *Life* and the other holds *death*.

In I John 1:1, we read: “that which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the word of life...” In this verse, John states that, “we heard, we saw...and we handled.” These phrases say the following:

We heard and we *believed*.

We believed and we *received*.

We received and we *conceived* (became pregnant with or impregnated by the Word of Life).

Once we have conceived and the Word of Truth in us is alive, then we are *no longer deceived!* The conception of the Word of God stops *the issue of blood* (man's mind / spirit).

Because we believed what we heard and received it into our hearts, we conceived of the Christ Seed (the words of Life and Truth), and now Christ, the Son of God-to-be, is being formed within during a period of gestation. When this conception occurs in an individual, he or she has no need for another D&C. There is no longer any need to dilate and cleanse the spiritual womb. The seed that has been received and conceived is a Right Seed and is incorruptible.

The work that goes on within one's heart and mind after the conception of the Right (God) Seed is the formation of the Child (the Christ, or Son of God) in accordance with the design of the original Seed. At the fullness of time needed for the perfection of the fully formed Son, then shall there be a Divine Manifestation of the Son of God in Man! The Child grows in the Knowledge of God until the day dawns (or, the water breaks)! The veil (or flesh) is rent (torn) and the Son of God is born.

In the first chapter of the Gospel of John we read the following excerpts taken from verses 1-18:

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God...He came unto his own, and his own *received him not*. But as many as *received* him, to them gave he power to *become the sons of God*, even to them that *believe* on his name... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, *and we beheld (saw) his glory*, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father...No *man hath seen* God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.”

These Scriptures tell us that when anyone will hear the Voice (Word) of God, believe it, and receive or accept it as Truth, he or she will literally become pregnant by God! The Word *is* God and



the Word *is* the Seed whereby a person is impregnated. The Seed grows and produces the Christ Mind, out of which comes the Son of God -- *from within!*

When does new Life begin to “work” (or move) in a seed? It does so at the moment of conception of the thing that one has accepted or received. The moment an egg in a woman’s womb makes contact with the sperm of the father-to-be, it receives life. It is now a living, moving, *concentrated unit of Life* taking form in the lower realm.

This Life Force must step down (lower, or reduce) its vibratory frequency in order to take form in a congealed mass called *man’s body* (or in any other earthly form). This Life Force is Light. All Life is Spirit, and all *things* are Spirit and Light. Some things manifest the Light brighter or greater than do others, however all things are from the same Source. All things in heaven (having a higher vibration) and earth (having a lower vibration) are manifestations of the one and self-same Spirit, Life, and Light!

The vibratory frequency of the *outer* physical body is lower than the frequency of the *Inner* Light. The outer flesh form is but a reflection as in a mirror of the Inner Light Form, from which it receives its beingness. Were there no Inner Light Form, there could be no outer form because the form or reflection in the mirror has no self-existence; it only exists in the mirror. Were there no mirror, the image would simply dissolve back into its state of being before the Inner Light “stepped down” in order to reflect visible form.

The physical body or anything that has visible form is but a *divider* -- an imaginary wall *between* the Life Force that holds it together. The *form*, however, moves and lives and has its being *in* the Presence of the True Light / Life Force. It vibrates at a natural rate which corresponds with the level of consciousness (the measure or brightness of the Light) of the Inner Form from which it receives its being.

Scientists know that the physical mass form of planet earth and everything *in it and on it* are traveling (moving or vibrating) through space at a much slower rate of speed or vibration than the speed of Light. This is a brilliant picture of creation. The lesser light (rate of vibration) is but a reflection of the Greater Light. Actually, though, to imagine one of these lights to be “greater” or “lesser” is a delusion -- a shadow, a reflection, or image -- *and this imagination has no true reality*. The thing formed could have no imagined being unless the Thing by which it was given form was *in it*.

The created thing (or form) was first in its Creator, but only as an image (idea). After it is manifested in tangible form, however, it is still *in* its Creator, as well as its Creator *in it*. If the Light Substance (which is *still* Light after It has a form) were not *within and without the form*, the expression of a form would cease to manifest.

The Inner Light manifesting outer, visible form occurs in a process that is somewhat like how a tree casts a shadow. The size and density of the shadow depend on the position of the sun. The size and position of the tree remain the same, but the sunlight casts the shadow.

The invisible Presence *without* is the same as *within*. All is Spirit, Life, and Light. All things that are expressing in form are literally swimming in the invisible Spiritual Presence wherein is all Life. We are all like a fish in the water. There is water all around the fish and *in* the fish. We are Spirit beings reflecting a form in the outer realm. The Presence of Spirit, Life, and Consciousness is Invisible Light and is the Spirit of the Word. It is the still, silent Voice of the Spirit of the Wisdom of God.

The *natural* rate of vibration of the Creative Substance -- Life, Light, and Consciousness -- is at the speed of Light. The *natural* rate of vibration of an earth form varies, depending upon its kind, nature, and purpose, and these depend upon its Inner Form or Design.

Every outer form has a specific and unique purpose, but many times a thing expressing an outer form is not used for its intended purpose, and this causes great confusion and chaos. The Word of Spirit is the Source of every form. It is the Creative Substance of God.

When this invisible supply of Substance is used in an inappropriate way, it produces loss instead of gain. The misuse of this Substance is the source of all of man's misery and destruction. The invisible supply of Spiritual Substance holds within it the power to operate, perform, or manifest in a constructive manner. It also holds within itself the power to be destructive and chaotic.

This unformed, Creative Spiritual Substance is "subject to the prophet" -- specifically, to the words of the prophet! The Substance does not discriminate. It is used by everyone. Man is the creator of his world, and he creates his world by the words of his mouth!

The creative Substance manifests in the form called for by the design that is in the spoken word (seed). If your words are constructive and Life-giving, then you will enjoy the blessing of your creative words. Likewise, if your words are negative and destructive, then your reward will be as you say.

Man is a descended Seed (Word) that must constructively ascend upward. All one need do to ascend is to recognize that *the only thing* that can ascend is *the thing* that descended! The *thing* that descended did so for the purpose of taking or reflecting in a form. In order to do so, it was necessary that it lower its natural rate of vibration.

The *thing* that we are speaking of here that descended is the Word of God (the unregenerated, lifeless Seed of God) -- and it *must* ascend in a living form of Spirit. The formless, invisible Voice of Spirit must be clothed with a living, visible form of expression in order to ascend into the highest Heaven. So in order to make the right use of (or correctly appropriate) the supply of Creative Spiritual Substance that is everywhere present, one must *hear* the Voice of Spirit (the Father) and *do* the thing that is *heard*!

This active work of *doing that which one hears* creates the visible form around and upon the invisible, living Voice of Spirit.

A tree gathers its Life Substance from the heavens above and the earth below; it grows itself and forms itself by making use of both the light above and the life below. It is by this means that it grows and becomes a great tree. It had its beginning in the dark, clammy earth in the form of a dead seed. Within the seed is the *design of a tree*. The design also holds within itself the consciousness of a carpenter who uses many kinds of operations, material, and tools. As the seed grows, this carpenter works day and night below the earth's surface -- pulling roots downward and at the same time sending the tree's trunk and its branches upward. This carpenter is the earth body (the natural mind) into which the Seed (Word) descended.

Once a seed is quickened (conceived) and Life begins to manifest as *movement*, the earth around the seed begins to expand to make room for the root to spread out and go down deep. The root must do this to find the water that is necessary to sustain its life and bring out of itself a tree -- its true design. At the same time, another kind of work is also going on in the now-living seed. While the root is working its way down into the depths of the earth, it is growing and is careful to position itself properly in the earth's foundation. The earth not only provides it with water, moisture, minerals, and all other provisions of life that are needed, but it also provides it with stability, strength, and the ability to withstand the greatest storms, floods, earthquakes, etc. that it *will* have to experience from time to time. The now-living seed's ability to endure is held within its foundation (the earth) and its root, depending on the root's depth, width, and breadth.

One need not give thought to what is going on outside (or above) the ground if the foundation is properly laid below. The very instant a seed within the earth (ground) is *conceived*, though it is in an infinitely small state at the beginning of its transformation into another form, two things begin to happen immediately. It begins to reach downward out of itself, while at the same time it

begins to reach upward. It is the nature of the seed to do this. The instant that life begins in a seed that is in the ground, the *Sun* (Light and Life) *recognizes Itself* in the earth below and begins to draw it upward into the heavens above! At the same time, the earth in which the seed has been planted also *recognizes itself* as the seed and begins to nourish, feed and protect it, as a mother does her child.

The seed need not struggle, work, toil, labor, fear, or doubt, or in any way take thought for its life-sustaining supply from the earth below or from the heaven above. The Sun (Son) will surely act in accordance with Its nature and draw Itself unto Itself! The only concern of the carpenter within the seed (which is you) is to follow the blueprint (earth plan) and know the right measurements that the Architect laid out for this tree, which is your eternal home. The design of this house is established so that the tree (you) will be able to *stand up* by its own (your own) power. The depth of the root, the frequency and sufficiency of its supply of water, and the *kind* of seed the root emerged out of will determine its ability to stand.

The earth below is the foundation of the tree that is your eternal home. The tree and its branches remain attached to the root (the father) and are between the father and the son (the root and the fruit). The root gets its Light and Life from the sun through the tree; the tree gets its nutrients and water from below, for which the root is a conduit. *The root is nothing and the tree is nothing* (described as Paul and Apollos in I Corinthians 3:6). It is the *earth* (the tree's foundation -- the Word) from which the water and nutrition flow upward through the root into the tree, *and the Light and Life from above* (the Spirit) that descend downward into the root through the tree -- *these* sustain the tree and the root.

Heaven and earth work together to *give health, life, and being* to the whole tree. Without both, there would not be a tree! Cut the tree down and its entire body will dissolve. Its root can also die, though it may remain in the ground (the earth). If so, there is a possibility of it reviving itself again, however its first form is dissolved forever.

The *seed* can only *die once* and resurrect itself as a tree. It is possible though, as long as there is *any* spark of life in the *root* from the original seed, for the tree to come to life *again* from the original, living root! This is called being born again. It can do this unless it is destroyed at the root. It *cannot* become another *kind* of tree or root, but it *can* form another *body* from the original design that was within the first and original seed!

Though the seed is gone forever in its original form, as long as there is life in the root which was formed out of the seed, there is *Hope*. The *Hope* is in the life of the *Root*! The tree with all of its beauty has perished and cannot be raised again, but another tree in its exact, express likeness can be raised out of the same Root - - which came out of the Original Seed!

Can you not see that once the seed (the Word of Truth) is believed, received, and conceived *below* -- given Life from the Light (the Father of Lights) -- one need not take thought for what is happening *above* in the outer regions? The Light, wherein is all Life, can do nothing but shine and be the thing that it is! Therefore, *because of its nature*, it will draw upward or cause to ascend all that have descended into the deep.

So the only need there ever was or ever will be again for *the seed* (Soul) to take thought or action was fulfilled when the work of the carpenter who measured, built, and established the foundation of the house was finished. When *the seed* (Soul) is given new life, it changes forms and *its* work is finished. Therefore, take your rest and let the thing that is natural *be* natural -- and become -- a fruit-bearing tree! Once the Word has been heard, believed, and received in your heart (your spiritual womb), conception has now taken place and new Life begins to vibrate within the Word. A new creature is in the making (being formed) as a new body of knowledge is being revealed.

The Life in the Light that appears at the point of conception (where the sperm meets and becomes one with the egg) is the smallest of

all lights and life forms. The *Life and Light* are, in fact, an atom (or Adam). It is at the connecting (or joining) of an atom (Adam -- man and woman, the whole man) that the explosion of Light and new Life begins. This is when Light (Spirit / seeing) and Matter (Word / hearing) begin to take the form that their Creator orders them to be. It is at the meeting or joining together of the *seeing eye* and the voice (*the hearing ear*) that new life begins. This is the manner in which all life forms are manifested. When the Word (Matter) and the Spirit (Life) meet, new Life begins and this new Life takes the form of the design within the Word (Seed).

The Light and Matter are subject to the Creator (the Potter). Or put another way, the Spirit, Light, and Life are subject to the Prophet. The son of man (the word or seed of man) can give temporary life and form to whatever he will! It is by the will (word) of Man that all Light meets and connects and gives form to Matter. It is according to the will of the speaker (the “prophet”) that Light and Matter join to begin a new expression of itself (the word, or seed) *in the form that the potter / prophet ordains it to be*. Whatever form it takes is entirely at the discretion of the potter. In and of itself, the clay (Matter, or Spirit / Light) has no ability to express in any form. It is always subject to the will (the word) of the Father / Potter / Creator!

This creative process is a *natural* one. Once the Seed (Word) has been planted (received) in good ground (a pure heart), the process begins. The carpenter, blueprint (design), and tools are held within the Word (Seed). The elements above work with the elementals (the living organisms) in the earth below, and they *know exactly* how to make the tree grow, prosper, and be in health -- even as its root grows deeper and wider and its trunk (body) grows ever higher and wider.

In any kind of seed, the tail (root or spine) first begins to take form at the instant new life begins. The tail starts its descent into the earth below, but at the same time its ascent begins! At the beginning of the process of regeneration, that which is above

reaches downward and meets or joins itself to the middle of the seed / egg to create a new form (or body). In this manner the Light and Life express themselves. This is the manner by which all things in all the universes below and above are held together and have their beingness.

The “isness” of this truth is *now!* The I Am *is* the Life and Light of beingness, and isness is that which *be*. I am Light, therefore I *be* -- alive! I am Light expressing as Life, in a form of flesh.

Light is, because Light *be*. I am the evidence that I am -- *because Life be now -- in the Light!*

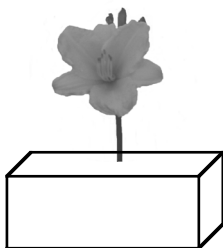
If thou canst believe, receive, and conceive of the Seed of Truth that is in you, when it is quickened by the Spirit of Life it will, in time, as you watch over and nourish it, dispel all darkness, deception, and ignorance concerning the Law of the Spirit of Life. *You shall live and not die!*

The Seed that is in you is you and it is your Soul. But until it is given new Life by the Spirit of God and becomes a *living Soul*, it will remain alone and continue the cycle of birth and death. A seed that is unregenerated and never planted, quickened, and given *new* Life and form (born again) will *remain alone -- without a wife* (or Life). So it is not good that the seed (Soul / Man) should be alone (dead), without a tree (a body / wife / Life). But when the seed is born again and becomes a Tree of Life, it can remain and produce fruit year after year. It can continue, generation after generation, through its fruit whose seed are in themselves. Galatians 6:7 says, “Whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.”





***Knowledge and Wisdom without  
Understanding belong to a fool.***



## Chapter 17

### **THE BEGINNING OF THE THIRD DAY**

Jesus said, “Tear down this temple (building) and on the third day I will raise it up.” Jesus’ comment here means that the resurrection will occur at the beginning of the third day -- at sunrise, or at the appearance of Light (Understanding). *It is now time for the resurrection, or more simply put, new revelation.* A new understanding is now appearing (or one might say, is now manifesting) regarding the message of Jesus. This new revelation of the Original Seed (Jesus) is, in fact, the fruit that he instructed his prophets to bring forth. This new revelation is a new day -- *the third day.* “Day” means “light.” *It is now a new day.*

Jesus said, “My Father is greater than I am.” He said, “greater works (words) than these shall you do (know) because I (my words, my message) go to the Father (or to Spirit/maturity).” He told them to wait in *Jerusalem* (which is the temple of his body of knowledge that he had given them) until they were empowered from on high. They were to wait there until they received revelation knowledge (or understanding) concerning his doctrine by the Spirit of God -- not new words, but a new revelation. *Knowledge is power.*

In the book of John, the Jews who followed Jesus asked him to give them a *sign* that his message was true and really from God. Jesus had just performed the first miracle at the wedding in their presence when he turned the water into wine. They did not see this miracle as proof or a *sign*, however, so they asked Jesus for additional evidence. His answer to them was this: “Destroy this temple and in three days, I will raise it up.” They thought that he spoke of a temple or building which was used for people to gather to worship their God, but he spoke of the temple of his body.

So then, what did he mean when he said to destroy this temple (his body) and in three days he would raise it up? We now know, of course, that he was speaking specifically about his words and his message -- remember that the Scriptures tell us that the word was made flesh (or given to be the knowledge of man). To illustrate that he was speaking of his words, I offer the following: in the Scriptures, we are also told that the word is as a seed. We know that when we plant a seed in the ground and give it water and nourishment, it will eventually be resurrected (come forth) in a different form. This new form is, in fact, a new life -- the once dead seed has now been quickened and life is revived. It is born again. Jesus only taught his disciples *earthly things* (knowledge). But in order for this knowledge (seed) to become *wisdom* (*heavenly things*), it must be born again!

Likewise then, Jesus had planted the word (the seed) of knowledge in the minds (ground) of his followers, and he was telling them that the Spirit (Father) would raise (resurrect) the seed (knowledge). It is this resurrection of the word in their conscious minds that would bring them new life -- the word in a new form and with a new understanding.

Most of us understand that when light (revelation) is experienced in our conscious mind, we receive wisdom. Enfolded within the fruit of wisdom we will find the Knowledge of the Holy, which is Understanding. Again, most of us have said, at one time or another when the light comes on within us, "Oh yes, now I see!" In the same way, Jesus told them that the Father (or Spirit of Truth) would quicken his words of Truth and he would give the increase (new life or understanding). Jesus made it clear that he sowed (planted) the seed, but it would be the Father (the Spirit) that would raise them up (raise his temple up) and give the seed their increase of wisdom and understanding. Jesus also told Peter that this is the way (by revelation) that he would build his church.

He told his disciples who had received his message (doctrine) to wait in Jerusalem until they were imbued with *power* from above.

The resurrected seed of knowledge (or word) is the living word (or wisdom) that is in fact, the *power* Jesus had spoken of. This is the *living temple* (or New Jerusalem or word) that comes down out of heaven from God. Jesus said, “*my words*, they are Spirit and they are Life.”

Jesus also stated that, “I am in the Father and the Father is in me. I am one with the Father.” In other words -- *the Spirit is in the Word, the Life is in the Spirit, and these three are one*. The Word, the Spirit and the Life are three manifestations and operations, yet they are one. Similarly, a seed and the tree that is formed out of the seed, along with the fruit wherein are more seed -- all are *one*. Each is in the other as the one seed (word), but each has its own form and purpose. The tree is in the seed; the fruit is in the tree; the new seed is in the fruit; but all came out of the *one* original seed.

We read in the book of Matthew that once again Jesus and his disciples were in a discussion about the buildings of the temple. He told them that there shall not be left here one stone upon another that shall not be thrown down. The stone Jesus referred to in this passage was the Law of Moses and the prophets of old (also called the carnal or earthly Law). The dead seed (word) would be thrown down (planted) in the ground (mind), and thereafter there would be a raising again of the temple -- *not new words, but new revelations*. Jesus said that he did not come to destroy the Law, but to fulfill it.

Jesus said, “*This gospel* of the Kingdom must be preached in all the world.” What was he really saying to those who received this message? He was simply telling them that *he (Jesus) was the end of the Law* -- the carnal commandments of men -- and the beginning of a new message (or a new Law). In other words, Jesus had received revelation regarding the Law of Moses and the prophets by the Spirit of Truth. This revelation comes in the form of wisdom as a direct result of the quickened seed or word.

Jesus also told Nicodemus that he had only taught him and others earthly things -- not heavenly things. He went on to tell them that *through being born again, they would live and not die*. Jesus was telling them that the word (knowledge) must be reborn or resurrected as wisdom, in a new form of knowledge -- in newness of life. This rebirth and everlasting life is as a seed that has been planted, resurrected, become a tree, and borne fruit (whose seed is in itself). In this way its life existence will continue and not die or pass away.

*It is not enough* for a seed to be planted and quickened and then only become a tree (become *wise*); the tree must bring forth good fruit. If the tree does not bring forth this good fruit, it cannot continue or extend its life beyond itself. The seed within this “good fruit” is *understanding*.

Jesus said that *this* gospel (word or doctrine) must be planted and on the third day he will raise (resurrect) a new temple. We see an example of this in a man and woman. We know that the woman (the second day / light) came out of the man (the first day / light). For these two (man and woman) to extend their life, the woman must conceive a child by the man; it is in this way that the man’s life and the woman’s life are extended as each new generation bears fruit out of itself. Each revelation by the Spirit of God is a new generation of knowledge (man), out of which will come a woman (wisdom). They must experience the holy conception or immaculate conception wherein new life (knowledge) is born. This is life without end!

The first two days that we speak of here are the first two lights - or we can call them knowledge and wisdom. The third day is the resurrection of the temple, which is the child of the first two lights -- understanding. The third light is the city that has no need of the first two lights (the moon and the sun) because the Glory of God is its Light. The *Glory of God* is fullness of Understanding of the Spiritual Law.

The Scriptures tell us that one day with God (Spirit) is as a thousand years. We then understand by revelation given by the Spirit that we are now, in fact, *in the third day*. It is because of this that people look for His appearing at any time. What is commonly misunderstood is that *His appearing* simply means that the gospel (or Word / Seed) that has been planted for over two thousand years is now ready to be resurrected or embodied. We have entered into a new dispensation of time. This new dispensation will bring with it the coming *harvest of new revelation knowledge*. All of those who have studied and have continued in His Word will be made perfect -- *wisdom perfected in the form of understanding*.

Paul admonished his followers to go on to perfection. This passage of Scripture simply means to plant, watch, keep a guard over, and wait with patience for the precious fruit to appear. It is *this* fruit that produces a second generation of seed that are *the Knowledge of the Holy, which is Understanding*. It is this Knowledge of the Holy that is perfect understanding of all things in heaven and earth as they are gathered together into *one* conscious mind. There will be no more seedtime and harvest time -- no more planting and reaping. The Seed (or Living Word of God) needs no planting because it (the Knowledge of the Holy) has everlasting Life in itself.

The promised coming age (new dispensation) that is now in its beginning stages is the culmination of both the so-called Old Testament and New Testament, which are also described as the first and second witnesses. These two shall become one. A new man will emerge that is a new body of knowledge, or higher level of understanding. This new revelation or body of knowledge will be a combination of both the Law of Moses (the first Covenant) and the New Testament (which is a promise of a coming new Covenant). This new Covenant is the Law of God, Who fills all and is in all. As Jesus said, "The Father will come." Now will be manifest the fullness of the knowledge of the Son (Seed / Word) of God unto a *perfect man*. Now man will operate in the understanding

of the Law of the Spirit of Life. This is the means by which the work of God will be manifested in earth.

Up until this point in time, what man believed to be the work of God has only been the work of the Son of Man (the power of man -- or Pharaoh's rod). It has *not* been done by the Knowledge (or Word) of the Holy, which is Understanding -- because man has not yet come to the full Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus. Christ is yet *being formed* in man's consciousness. As man has borne the likeness of the earthly, he will now bear the likeness of the heavenly (or spiritual) body of knowledge.

We have now entered into the third day in which all of man's *knowledge* (in earth) and *wisdom* (in heaven) will be gathered together into one -- in the fullness of the Godhead bodily -- having complete and perfect understanding of all things. We see this promised by the apostle Paul in his writings to the Ephesians.

Paul also said elsewhere that, "My strength is made perfect in weakness." What did Paul really mean? We know that strength is joy, for "the joy of the Lord / Spirit is my strength." We also know that joy is the firstborn son. The woman is said to be *weaker* than man because she cannot reproduce without the seed of the man that she came out of. So therefore the beginning of wisdom (woman) is knowledge, and the end of woman (wisdom) is also knowledge. But the first form of knowledge (man, or seed) abides alone without the wisdom (woman, or tree), as does the woman without the man. So the woman *conceives of the lesser* (which she came out of) so that she can *produce out of herself the greater knowledge*.

If we look at it this way, it may help us see the picture more clearly: man *alone* without woman is knowledge or *peace*. The woman (wisdom) who is the *love* of the man, together with the man produce the son of *joy*. These three -- peace, love, and joy -- are in fact, one! It can be said that the beginning of the wisdom of God (which is love) is peace. Out of these two, peace and love, comes the joy of



understanding, which is the knowledge that is produced out of this holy, spiritual conception.

When wisdom (the mother of us all) has come to full term, she will give birth to the knowledge of the Holy, which is perfect understanding -- to all who love her. The wisdom of God is the bride of Christ whose head is God.

Jesus said, "Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures today and tomorrow, and the third day I shall be perfected. Nevertheless I must *walk* today, and tomorrow, and the day following... Ye shall not see me, until the *time come* when you shall say, Blessed (increased) is he that cometh in the name of the Lord." The name of the Lord is God Consciousness, or as some call it, Cosmic Consciousness. The word "name" here means the Fruit of the Spirit or the Children of God. "Name" also means proof, evidence, or a sign; it is a signet or a mark. *The proof or evidence of Truth (God) is its fruit / name.*

Paul told us that now we know in part and we prophesy in part. Prophecies shall fail, tongues (preaching) shall cease, and the knowledge (of man) shall vanish away. When that which is perfect has come (the seed or knowledge which is contained in the fruit of the wisdom of God, wherein is understanding), then that which is in part (seed and tree only, or knowledge and wisdom apart from understanding) shall pass away. Then there shall be a new earth and a new heaven, which simply means that there will be a new body of knowledge and a new body of wisdom. The apostle John was talking here about the great city (light), the Holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God! The wisdom of God is His holy Temple, or the holy Jerusalem, out of which come the holy people (sons and daughters, or seed / word) of God. This is the Knowledge of the Holy, out of which comes perfect Understanding and eternal Life.

In the book of Revelation we read that the tabernacle of God is with man, and that he (God) will dwell with them, and they shall

be his people, and God himself shall be with them and be their God. Now we know that the Word of God *is God*, and that God *is* Spirit and Life. So then we understand this to say that the Living Word of God will dwell with man, and that this Living Word of God is then not only *with man*, but is also *in man* and is the *God of man*. We also know this to be the last and final resurrection that follows the second death (or planting) of the word. This is the baptism in the Holy Spirit. This word (new revelation of Truth) must be experienced in man's consciousness, bringing with it eternal Life -- the fullness of the knowledge of God -- the Living Crown of Life.

Jesus embodied or fulfilled the Law of Moses and the prophets. Jesus' doctrine was said to be the good seed or knowledge of good, and he was called the good shepherd -- as opposed to the seed or knowledge of evil. Now is the time and age that the message or doctrine of Jesus and his apostles must be fulfilled or embodied. This is the "going on to perfection" spoken of by the apostle Paul. In order for man to accomplish this, he must leave behind the carnal washings, rituals, baptisms, and repentance which are called the principles of the doctrines of Christ. These are embodied in the first and second covenants, and a man must leave them behind and experience this new revelation which is the last and final testament (witness). This new revelation is the promised Law of God which will be written and engraved on the canvas of man's heart by the Spirit of God. *This is the Law of the Spirit of Life*.

The principles of the doctrines of Christ that man must leave behind are the first form of knowledge and wisdom (the earthly). We have known Jesus after the flesh (the carnal mind), but we must put away, or crucify the flesh. This knowledge of man produced the wisdom of man, with corrupt seed. It must be done away with; Mount Sinai -- the bond woman and her son -- must be left behind by receiving new revelation. You must cast out or put away the old by receiving the new. This is how the mind is renewed by the Spirit to newness of Life.

Man must go on to perfect knowledge. The tree of Life is the wisdom of God that comes down out of heaven from God or Spirit. She must bear fruit, because it is *her seed that is the Perfect Knowledge of the Holy*, which is the Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life.

The Scriptures tell us that our bodies are the temple of the Holy Spirit. They also tell us that the “word” became flesh. In John 6:53, Jesus said, “Except you eat the flesh (body) of the Son of Man and drink his blood (Spirit), you have no life in you.” Surely we realize that Jesus did not mean for them to literally eat his flesh and drink his physical blood.

To receive the prize, all must eat his flesh (Jesus’ words of Truth) and drink his blood (the Spirit or Life of the Word) in order to embody *his doctrine*. The embodiment of his doctrine will produce the fruit of eternal Life for all who give birth to the fully-formed Christ within.

One *must* get his eyes off of the *man Jesus* and onto the *message Jesus*. As long as one remains focused upon the *man Jesus*, he is operating in the deadness of the seed. One will never truly know the messenger (Jesus) until or unless he first knows or joins with his message. This requires one to continue, to meditate, and study the message until he experiences revelation knowledge, as did Peter. *The messenger is revealed within the message*, which is the doctrine of God. As Jesus told Peter, “Flesh and blood (your carnal mind or man’s doctrine) did not reveal this to you, but my Father (the Spirit) which is in heaven.” This is why there will be few that will come to know Him! This is precisely why we are instructed to seek and obtain Knowledge; to seek and obtain Wisdom; but *with all of our getting, we are admonished to get Understanding*.

In chapters one and two of Ephesians, we are given a clear, unmistakable, and exact accounting of what we can look for and expect to happen on the Third Day. The first two days of the

dispensation of times described by Jesus in Luke 13:32 as “today and tomorrow,” when he would cast out devils and do cures, has ended. It is now the beginning of the Third Day or the third part of that dispensation of time when he would be *perfect*! The year of 1994 was the end of the second day and *the beginning of the Third Day*!

The word or term “Day” means *Light*! We have the first *two* days (lights) depicted as the first two Covenants, or the greater and lesser lights. We see this allegory as the *sun* and *moon*. It is also described in many other ways, such as the freewoman and the bondwoman. The Third Day (Light) is described as or called the Bride -- the New Jerusalem, and it is also called Zion, the Temple or City of God.

The book of Ephesians is addressed to a group of Souls who are called *the Saints and the Faithful in Christ Jesus*. It is not written to those who are not yet sanctified and walking in Truth. *The Living Word of Truth is the Substance called Faith*. In Ephesians 1:4, Paul tells those who qualify that they have been chosen before the foundation of the world -- which is the dispensation before the Law of Moses was given. The Law of Moses is the foundation of the worldly sanctuary (see Hebrews 9:1).

The book of Ephesians also tells us that this Sanctified and Faithful state of Spiritual Growth is required in order to be able to receive the wisdom needed in order to understand the mysteries of the Will of God which He has purposed in Himself. Ephesians 1:10 clearly tells us *when* and *how* this is to be accomplished. Verse 10 says, “That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him.” Verse 11 tells us that we are predestined to receive an inheritance according to the purpose of God. Verse 13 tells us that the Souls who have obtained this level of consciousness or Spiritual Growth have also been *sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise*. In other words, this seal is a mark or name that identifies us as belonging to the household of Faith -- to the household of God! This mark is simply our state of

consciousness in and as the renewed, Born Again Mind -- the Christed, or Enlightened Mind.

Let us look again at verse 10: "That in the dispensation of the fullness of times (the three days mentioned herein) that he (God) might gather together in one *all* things in Christ, both in heaven and on earth." Verses 17-19 tell us *how* this will be done and *what happens* as a result of this gathering together of things in heaven and on earth (the first and second Covenants) in one Body of Knowledge in our conscious mind. Paul prays: "That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of Wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him." It is by Revelation given by the Spirit of Wisdom that the mysteries of Life and Godliness are imparted to us. This Body of Knowledge given by Revelation is called the Knowledge of the Holy. It is the *Understanding* of the Law of the Spirit of Life.

Verse 18 says: "The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints." Verse 19 then says: "And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power." (*His mighty Power is the Knowledge of Wisdom*).

In Ephesians 2:14-16 Paul says, "For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and has broken down the middle wall of partition between us; Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain (the man and the woman, or the first two Covenants) **One New Man**, so making peace (not as the world gives); and that he might reconcile both (Covenants) unto God in *one body* (of Knowledge) by the cross (passing from death to Life), having slain the enmity (the old man or the carnal mind -- see Romans 8:1-10) thereby."

You hold in your hand and your eyes have looked upon this **One New Body of Knowledge** herein described. This New Revelation

is the fulfilling of the promised inheritance and the redemption of the purchased possession. The righteousness of the Law as described in Romans 8:4 will be fulfilled in all who will embody **this Book of New Revelations**. Those who walk not after the flesh (the natural mind) -- those who possess the Christ Mind and walk after the Spirit -- will be able to fulfill the righteousness of the Law of Life. They are the ones who are the Sanctified and the Faithful!

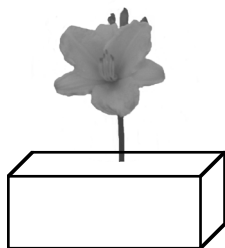
This New Body of Knowledge contains not *new words*, but New Revelations of *the same Jesus -- the Word!*

*Knowledge and Wisdom without the fruit of the Spirit, wherein is Understanding, belong to a fool.*

*To God be praise forever -- this is the Third Day!*



***Forbid not the Little Children to come unto me,  
for of such are the Kingdom of Heaven.***





## Chapter 18

### **CONSIDER THE LILIES: HOW THEY GROW**

In Matthew 6:28, Jesus said; “Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow.” Let us now do as he said. (For the sake of continuity with the biblical writings, I am spelling “lilies” here as is done in the King James Bible.)

Here on the earth plane, the Lilies are white flowers that grow in water as well as out of dry land. They are also found in an array of colors. In biblical language, the Lilie is a white flower whose beginning is the seed of Faith. This is the “kind” of Lilie that we will be discussing throughout this chapter. It is also the flower that precedes the fruit of Faith. This fruit of Faith is one of the manifestations of the “fruit of the Spirit” mentioned in Galatians 5:22.

The Lilie is born out of the quickened seed of Faith (Truth) and it is the bloom of the fruit of Faith. The Lilie is the Substance of Faith that worketh by Love (Wisdom). The Branch is the firstborn of the Tree of Wisdom (Love), and the Lilie is the child of the Branch. The fruit of the Lilie is Joy!

When the Lilie is in the form of a flower it is more mature than when it was only a bud, but because it is not yet in the form of fully ripe fruit, it is not yet perfect. These Lilies in the flower form are called the Saints of God. They are the children of the justified -- those who *live by Faith*. They are the chosen of God and they are the *sanctified ones* that will be the *glorified Word* at maturity. The Lilie must patiently endure all things or else all is truly lost.

When the Lilies reach maturity they are called *the fruit of the Spirit*, wherein are found the *Pearls of Wisdom*. These pearls come out of the Pearl of Great Price, which is the Tree of Life. When the Lilies reach maturity they are also called the jewels of the Father, or the treasures of heaven. As the Lilies steadfastly endure the great winds and waters of the storms of life that try to overtake them, the *work of patience* within them makes and forms them into the perfect, *mature* fruit of Spirit, which are the Sons of God!

Those who endure are those “that are alive and remain” after the storm is over. When the great shaking comes, they are the ones that remain on the tree. They hold on to their heritage (which is the Root of Faith), and by Faith they live, grow, and come to full maturity. They then enter into the kingdom of their Father.

The Lilies of the field are *true, pure, holy, and virgin*. They are the coming sinless sons and daughters of God. They are the flowers of the coming harvest of the workers of the field.

In Galatians 3:23 we read: “But before *faith* came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the *faith* which should afterwards be revealed.” By this we make distinction between *two generations of Lilies*. The Lilie *of the field* is the flower of the good seed (wheat), out of which we receive the *Bread of Life*. The other Lilie is the flower of the *Tree of Life* -- the *born again good seed* or born again word of Truth. The Lilies of the Tree are called the Saints of God, and are the flowers of the resurrected Body of Christ, the Tree of Life. These Lilies are the flowers of the fruit of the Spirit called Faith. So we see that the Lilie *of the field* is the flower of the wheat (the Bread / the Body of Jesus / the Bridegroom), and the Lilie *of the Tree* is the flower of the Spirit -- the *Life of the Bread* (the flower of the Bride)!

We see the evidence of this truth again in Matthew 13:24-30 and 36-43 in the parable of the wheat and the tares. The good seed are the wheat that is sown in the field. We also read in I Corinthians 12:1 & 9 that *Faith* is a *gift of the Spirit*, and in Galatians 5:22 we read

that *Faith* is listed as one of the manifestations of the ***fruit of the Spirit***. The first increase of Faith then, is the Bread of Life (the man / the Bridegroom) -- the ***gift*** of God to all. The increase of the man (the first fruit / the Bridegroom) is the woman (the Bride); she is the Tree of Life. The Lilie of the Tree of Life is the flower of the ***fruit of the Spirit -- the Living Faith!***

The workers of the field (that are few) are seen in David's five smooth stones that he took when he went to face the giant Goliath. The stones are the teachers, prophets, apostles, evangelists and pastors. They represent the five-fold ministry. These workers are the Branches (the first fruit) of the Tree of Life that have been given the office of oversight. They do the work of the ministry, which is to protect and assist in the perfecting of the Saints (the Lilies -- their children that have been begotten by them). They are not willing that one of these Little Ones should become lost or perish. It is with great patience and complete devotion that the Branches faithfully wait for the manifestation of the *fully-formed fruit of their labor*.

The teachers, prophets, apostles, evangelists and pastors are the great branches that are also represented by the twelve disciples of Christ. The branches are the firstborn of the Tree of Life, and *their* firstborn are the leaves. When the Lilie (which is the second generation child of the branch) comes forth, the branches together with the leaves provide the little flowers with protection from the winds, rain, and burning sun.

If you will read Ephesians 4:8-11, you will see that the Scripture speaks of the gifts that are given unto man. The gifts of God are represented in the five-fold ministry: teachers, prophets, apostles, evangelists, and pastors. Every living Soul holds the design or seed of each of these gifts within it.

The Lilies are the second generation of the branches and the third generation of the tree. The Lilies are the fourth generation of the seed (the root). The Tree that births out of herself the bud, bloom,

flower, and the fully mature fruit also births out of herself both large and small branches and leaves; these branches and leaves provide protection and safety for the younger children, the immature fruit. The children of the Kingdom (the Lilies -- who are the Saints of God) toil not and they spin not, yet Solomon in all of his glory (wisdom) was not clothed or arrayed as one of these. They are the fruit of the works of Faith. The work resulting in the fruit is accomplished through the quickened seed (in the form of the root, the tree, the branch, and the leaves). Once the fruit is mature, these workers enter into their rest.

The Lilies are the true, divine, pure, holy, and virgin Saints of God. In the flower form they are already the holy Sons of God, howbeit they are yet children. They sanctify themselves by themselves, and come forth as pure gold in the Father's house. The Lilies are the flowers of Faith and they express their presence and beauty between the seed and the fruit. They hold within themselves the mark of the *death* of the seed and the evidence of the *life* of the fruit. In this state they serve both the seed (the earthly form) and the fruit (the heavenly form). They are neither, yet they are both. They are the seed that was, and is not, but yet it is. They are the coming fruit that "calleth that which be not as though it is." The fruit (or jewels) that come to maturity are the work of patience in the flowers which are called the Lilies.

From the Lilies' beginning to the end of their lives (in their form as flowers), they hang on a tree, suspended between heaven and earth. They are always in hope of becoming less fragile as they are strengthened by their Father (the root of Faith), and they look forward to growing up and becoming the fully formed sons and daughters of their Father.

The following is an allegorical description of *how the Lilies grow* from their beginning to end -- which actually is not an end, because they have no end!

As we have already stated, the Lilies we are discussing here are

the Saints of God. In I John 2:13 they are called “little children.” The beginning of the Lilies was through *one seed* (Christ), but in their mature state, which is in the form of the fruit from that one seed in the first generation, there are many seeds within them, and of this lineage there shall be no end.

In the beginning, the one seed -- out of which came the Lilies -- was alone. The seed is a Soul called “Man.”

After the seed is quickened, then comes the root and new life begins; a new generation is born in the form of a tree, or “woman.” Man is now no longer alone.

From within the tree, the branches come forth.

The branches first put forth their leaves.

Next, the branches bring out of themselves the flowers; these are the Lilies -- the Saints of God.

When the Lilies are in full bloom, the work is *almost* done, but the greatest of all of the work of Faith that is needed to produce the precious fruit out of the Lillie is yet to come. Without the fully mature and fully ripened fruit, there can be no seed for future generations. *These Seed are the Prized Treasures.*

The leaves not only serve to protect the flowers (the Lilies) from the wind, rain, snow, and sun during their seasons, but when the leaves' present tabernacle (form) is perished and they fall away from the tree, then their work will have just begun. During their season, they hung from the high places on the branches of the tree where they were seen and admired by all who passed by. They were beautiful, green, and full of life. The birds (ministering spirits) were able to take shelter under their protection when needed. The animals on the ground below were thankful for the cool shade they provided them during the heat of the day, and they were also grateful to be somewhat sheltered from the wind, cold, rain, snow, and ice while resting under the leaves' protective cover.

While expressing life in their first form, however, the leaves with all of their various services and beauty (attention from their followers) are only training and making preparation for the work to which they are called. While the leaves are in their first (heavenly) green form and in full array, they are only *as a seed* whose dispensation of time is for a short part of one season. They actually endured for a whole season but their service *while in mature form* only lasted for a short time. It took them part of the season to come forth and grow to maturity, and before the season ended they began to change in appearance (became undesirable to their followers). After this change in appearance the leaves began their great falling away. But for a short work and for a short period of time in their *fully formed state* they helped to protect the brethren, the branches, which are also their fathers. They even provided a measure of help as a covering and protection to their mother, the tree. They also provided shelter for the Lilies and served their neighboring friends (the birds / ministering spirits) who would often stop by for a visit -- those who came to their public gatherings. Some of these visitors even became members of the leaves' church. The leaves are representative of the many different religious doctrines that only last for a season.

As we have already stated, when the life of the leaves in their first form (man's doctrine) has ended, their true purpose and their real work is just beginning. They must humble themselves, die, and fall to the ground. They must now change forms and put off their previous form of beauty and stature because their service as green leaves in the limelight is over. They will now join with those of low estate who are also fallen, humbled, and broken.

They must all go through *another* "regeneration" following their fall to the ground. They will change into a corruptible form that is ugly and not desired by anyone. In and on the ground (the carnal mind) they will mingle their broken, ugly bodies (false beliefs) with all of the other types and kinds of corruption (false teachings) all around them in the dust of the earth (man's fleshy mind).

Their work in the earth (the mind of man) is now to provide life-giving food and nourishment to their parents -- their Father (the

root) and their Mother who is joined to their Father (she is the tree out of which they came). Now the leaves' only hope of ever being born again in another form (hopefully to serve in a better and greater capacity) is if they are chosen by the Father (the root) to once again be placed within their mother's womb (the tree) and be born again. Perhaps this time the Father will choose them to become the fruit -- a son, instead of a servant. The Father gives all things (seeds) form and purpose as it pleases Him.

Becoming the fruit (a son) is much more involved than being a mere leaf, which serves only as a servant. The leaves (the servants) encounter only *little* problems (trials and testings) while in their lifted-up state. They also have no idea how brief their service in the first form as an exalted leaf (servant) will be, and they certainly know not what is to follow after their falling away and they begin to be subject to eating humble pie. In this state of consciousness, the leaves (servants) actually *think* they are the fruit (sons). The leaves are truly in for a rude awakening.

But oh, the Lilie -- the Son -- is another story! First the tree (mother) must give birth to the bud through her son (the branch), and then the whole family must work together to protect and nurture the bud as it unfolds as a fragile blossom flower. The whole family must keep a watchful, protective eye on the Lilie until it is fully mature as a fruit (a son). But even with all of their protection, *only a very few Lilies (sanctified Souls) make it to full maturity.*

Those who are chosen by the Father (the Root) to become the fruit of the Tree of Life, (the Sons of Wisdom) will provide eternal life for all generations to come. But those whose ministry it is to provide food to the Tree of Life (the dead, fallen, and corrupt leaves -- the doctrines of men) can only endure for a season (in earthly terms). Time after time they enter again and again into their mother's (the tree's) womb by way of (or through) the Father, the root. They never know what their form or purpose may be in their next incarnation or regeneration. Will a leaf express as a leaf again, or as a twig? Perhaps it may even grow into a branch

of the tree. Or maybe, just maybe, the Father will choose it to be one of the twelve kinds of fruit of the Tree of Life (a Son)!

The leaves now lay all around in the form of rotten, decaying fertilizer on and within the ground (man's mind). Parts of them are scattered all over, always in danger of being captured and put into prison by some other man (tree root). They face the possibility of being born again in some other country, perhaps having another set of parents from some other tribe (another doctrine). Perhaps they will have as siblings branches, leaves, blossoms, or fruit that are not as kind as their previous household or family members have been. Maybe they will be rejected as David was by his siblings, or as Joseph was when his brothers sold him and put him in a hole.

The root (the father) of a tree gathers its provision for its family out of the earth's rotten corruption and the stench of death, partaking of the life's blood (the spirit of man) of all who fell from the towering trees all around. The blood (spirits) of other kinds of earth creatures (the beasts) may also be mixed together in the ground from which it gathers its sustenance.

*It is from the shed blood and flesh of all living creatures, cast aside after their metamorphic cycles, that the physical earth receives its life.* The dead provide the earth with the ability to continue to give life to all who eat of her fruit. The son of man (the earthly form) becomes the Son of God (the heavenly form), but only after the death, burial, and resurrection of the son of man. The Soul (or seed, which is Man) evolves in consciousness from the root to the fruit, and in the process it experiences all aspects of the seed (earth) and the tree (heaven) from its beginning to its end.

Have you ever considered where *you* are in conscious evolution toward Cosmic Mind -- where *you* are in *your* evolution toward becoming the fully mature Son of God? This was and is the express purpose of God concerning Soul (Man), that it should become a fully formed Son made in the likeness of God, the Father of Life.



We are instructed in the Scriptures to “make our calling (progress) and election sure.” Have you done this? The apostle Paul said that he counted all that was gain or increase to him “but dung” (fallen, dead, ugly leaves, or earthly fertilizer) that he may win Christ.

Paul spoke of running the race. He said that all run but only one wins. What did he mean by this? Hopefully by the time you finish reading the writings of this body of knowledge you will know the answer to this question if you do not already know it.

Jesus instructed and ordained his disciples to perform in every position of ministry. He told them to “feed the hungry.” In other words, he was telling them to humble themselves, be the dung, and feed the whole family -- all of the members of the household: the root, the tree, and all of its children. He said to “visit (sire -- be a father to) the motherless and fatherless.” These are the unquickened seeds yet in the womb of the mother (the Tree of Life). These are the “dead in Christ.”

Jesus also said to open the prison doors (the grave, the burial ground) and set the captives free. He was saying to give new life to the words (spirits) of the just men who died in the Faith (the seed form), and to bring forth fruit out of the Lillie. He said to “open the eyes of the blind” (the sleeping prophets / the ministers / the branches) because they are the eyes of the whole earth family. When open, their eyes run to and fro over the whole earth (your mind), seeking out their own (members of their own household) to protect and teach them. They are the eyes (light) of the tree (the mother) and they watch over the entire household.

The branches’ work is required and needed in every direction, on all four sides of the Father’s house. The north, south, east, and west are all guarded by their watchful eyes. They send their messages to the whole nation (household). Their voices are heard throughout the whole land (man’s conscious mind). They are the ones who sound the trumpets. Their voices (those of the true ministers of God) always give a distinct sound to the rest of the household. Their sound is heard from the root to the fruit. They

are high and lifted up from the earth and are able to see afar off. They are also in a position to see the color of the sky and commune with the great clouds of witnesses, and by doing so they are able to send a message to all of the members of the household concerning things to come and warn them of what kind of weather to expect. By providing this kind of help to the tree and to all members of the household, they are able to help prepare the tree for whatever condition, season, or experience that may be on the way. Every aspect of this work helps to facilitate the growth and perfection of the Soul.

This tree that we are discussing here is, in fact, **YOU**. Our analogy describes each aspect of the tree's growth, from its beginning as a dead seed (Soul) to its end as fruit with seed within itself -- the living Son of God. *This is the way the Lilies grow!*

So far we have described some of the work of a true minister (a Son of God-to-be). We have talked about the branches that serve in various capacities, whose children are the leaves and flowers. We have talked about the root and tree (the Father and Mother) who also work in the area of service. We see the tree as the body and the root as the feet (or foundation). The hands are the leaves and the eyes (prophets) are the branches. The green leaves (the first fruit of the branches) are the overseers that provide protection and healing. They represent the carnal Law, out of which so many religious doctrines have evolved. Afterward, the leaves (the servants) willingly lay down their lives to feed and nurture the whole family as they fall to the ground and humble themselves. As dead leaves, the servants (the firstborn -- the dead in Christ) provide the dung (fertilizer or food) that keeps the whole family alive. Paul described this in his writings.

We have now discussed all parts of the body and their many different manifestations and operations -- all except one. Where is the hearing? Thus far we have considered how the earthly form grows, beginning with the seed and growing through the different stages of the tree, the branches, and the leaves. We have learned that the

first fruit of the tree (the branches) and the first fruit of the branches (the leaves) are assigned many duties in the work of teaching, protecting, overseeing, correcting, and perfecting the whole household. We will now consider the *heavenly* form and how the Lilies *continue* to grow.

The Scriptures say, “Let him that has an ear *hear* what the Spirit is *saying*.” The hearing (the ear -- the Voice of Spirit) *does not come with the first generation* (the first fruit) of the prophets. The first fruit of the branches are the leaves (the servants), and they are the earthly forms (man’s religion). They are the ones who walk by sight (or seeing) and not by hearing (Faith). Jesus never called himself *an ear* (or hearing), but he always referred to himself as the light (*the eye* of the body -- the prophet). Through the Lilie, the second-born of the branch, a new generation is born. Out of the seed of the mature Lilie will come a whole new nation, beginning with another comforter (another woman -- the new Jerusalem called Zion). This seed from the mature Lilie is the resurrected Christ seed out of which comes another tree (body of knowledge) that is the heavenly or spiritual body. This heavenly body of knowledge comes by Divine Revelation. This body of knowledge is the City of Light -- the City of God!

The first generation or family was earthly and walked by the light (the prophet); it lived by seeing outer manifestations. This earthly form or body of knowledge is the work of the evangelists, teachers, prophets (the seers), apostles, and pastors. They are the branches, *but their work will not be needed in the heavenly form*. Their service will end with the death of the earthly form or body of knowledge -- the death of the leaves (the carnal doctrines, which are the first fruit of the branches). But the *born again seed* that was taken out of the *fruit of the first tree* (the fruit being the mature Lilie -- the True Son of God) is now also a Life-giving tree. It has the ability to live *by hearing* (Faith) -- no longer walking by sight or by seeing alone. The born again seed (Soul) is able to both *see* what the Father does and also *hear* what the Father has to say. The born again (or second generation) Soul has both eyes that *see* the light and ears that *hear* the voice of Spirit (Faith).

If you have an ear to hear the *Voice of Spirit*, then you have passed from death (seeing only) to Life. You can both see *and* hear. These two are of one body and through the *eye* (seeing) and *ear* (hearing of Spirit) comes the fruit which is the *mind that has Understanding*. The seeing eye (the prophet) came in the first fruit (the earthly form), but the hearing ear belongs *only* to the second generation of children (the Lilies) wherein are the seeds (words) of eternal Life! Walking by sight is of the earth and is earthly, but the ear that hears the Voice of Spirit is from heaven and is heavenly. The *seeing eye* and the *hearing ear* work together for the good of all as they gather together all things into one which are in heaven and in earth.

If you choose to inherit the earth only (seeing only, walking by sight), remaining deaf to the Voice of the Spirit, then you may do so. However, as long as you choose to remain in the earthly form you will continue to experience seedtime and harvest. Or better said, the cycle of death, burial, and resurrection will continue for you. This is called “the wheel of birth and (so-called) death.” It is also called reincarnation or re-generation or re-germination.

Every Soul can remain in the earthly *body of knowledge* -- the dead, fleshly seed form -- for as long as it chooses. It can also choose to receive Eternal Life and ascend into the heavenly form (heavenly body of knowledge) and end the seedtime and harvest (temporary life)! In I Corinthians 15:44-58 (I suggest you read all of this) we see that there is first a natural body and afterward a Spiritual Body. Verse 49 says, “And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear (give birth to) the image of the heavenly.”

The Lillie is in the *center* between the root (the earthly form) and the fruit (the heavenly form). Without the flower of the Substance called Faith there can be no fruit -- no heavenly, spiritual form or body of knowledge. Likewise, without the root (the earthly seed) there can be no source of life for the Lillie.

The *center* is a source from which something originates -- a point, area, person or thing that is most important or *pivotal* in relation to an indicated activity, interest, or condition. "Pivotal" means a key position or key player. A pivot is a shaft or pin on which something turns; it is a person, thing, or factor having a major or central role, function, or effect. *The whole earth family*, your whole being -- Spirit, Soul, and body -- is depending on the Lilie (the flower of your Soul -- the "Patience of the Saints") to attain to full maturity (the manifested Son of God), wherein is Eternal Life.

Jesus said, "If you *continue* in my word (the Truth) you shall *know* the Truth and the Truth will make you free." "Free from what?" one may ask. Free from the wheel of birth and so-called death! Every Soul must seriously "consider the Lilies -- *how they grow*."

Man is a Soul. A Soul is a Word. A Word of Truth is a God Seed. The God Seed (Word) is Spirit and Life and it is the Voice of God. Soul was created by the Voice of Spirit, which gave it its kind, form, and nature. *Everything* is truly within a God-Seed or Soul that is called Man.

We have been discussing the parable that Jesus gave concerning the Lilies of the field: what they are and *how they grow*. We have discussed the *seeing eye* and the *hearing ear*. But let us return to the *place and time* when Soul first received its name, because the evolution of Soul Consciousness is what the parable of the Lilies is all about.

Soul was called *Man* long after its first beginnings. Regardless of what name a thing may be identified by or recognized as, it nevertheless remains *what it is*. A name does not change the *original kind, nature, and purpose* of a thing. It does however, give identification to the *form* (whatever the form may be) through which the *true identity* of the thing has chosen to express or manifest itself.

Let us go back to Soul's (or Man's) beginning in Genesis 1:26-31. Perhaps you will want to read all of these verses, but I will

only use excerpts here. Verse 26 tells us that “God” determined to make a form and call it Man; in other words, God desired to create a house of clay (flesh) in which Spirit would dwell. Soul is a creation of the Word of Spirit, and Spirit is God. So this house of clay (flesh) is the temple of God and is the dwelling place of Spirit.

These verses of Scripture also tell us that this form of expression (by Spirit) that is called Man will have dominion over all other created forms on earth. Let us consider the term “*make*” that is used in Genesis 1:26 (“let us *make* man in our likeness.”) We also see in Genesis 2:7 that concerning Soul (or Man) God used the term *formed*. From the use of these two terms -- make and form -- we conclude that it will be a work in progress. In other words, the creative work involved in *making and forming* the idea of Man, along with all of the assignments given to the Man-idea that are associated with the finished work, were not going to be complete by just simply saying it or by simply speaking the name *Man*.

The terms *make* and *form* do not mean the same thing. A person can *make* many pies, all of which may taste different or have different flavors, colors, or appearance. Each pie can also have altogether different ingredients in it. The *form* (shape) of a pie identifies *what* it is, but the form of the pie does not identify what *kind of pie it is*. Likewise, by simply looking at a being expressing in what we identify as a man’s form, you cannot tell and determine by appearance only what *kind* of man he is. Similarly, unless a person is an authority on seeds (words), by simply looking at a seed he will not be able to tell what kind of tree it will be and therefore what *kind* of fruit the seed holds within itself. We can only know a tree by the *kind* of fruit it births or bears. Again, what we must consider about the Lilie is *how it grows*. It does not toil or spin -- yet it grows!

Every manifestation of Life is an expression of Spirit. Life may express itself in various visible forms or it may express as invisible form. Hearing and seeing have no visible form, but they both affect the visible forms in and through which they express. It is

likewise the same for man's sense of touch (feeling), smell, and taste. All of these invisible expressions of Life affect the visible house (body) that they express in, *but they are not* the form or body. The feelings are not the nerves but they affect the body through the nervous system.

Given what we have discovered concerning God's plan and purpose for *making* and *forming* Soul in a fashion that would be called or identified as Man, let us take a closer look at *how* this was to be accomplished. Let us take another look at the Lilie, *how it grows*.

I will not describe here the conditions that existed before or at the beginning of the creation of Soul. Let us begin *after* Soul entered into a man's form on the earth plane. At that time there was not a woman (or a mate) found for Man in any of the other created forms or beings. The *genesis* of Soul *as Man* began at the time the Soul began to emerge out of the kingdom (the dispensation) of the beastly state of consciousness and merge into the kingdom (the dispensation or consciousness) of *Man*. This Man state of consciousness is followed by the descent of the first comforter in the bodily form of a dove. The Spirit in the form of a dove is only a *measure* of Life and is the "peace that the world gives" (the peace given by the earthly, fleshly, seed state form of true knowledge) that was mentioned by Jesus in John 14:27.

Emergence from one state of consciousness into the next is accomplished by the renewing of the mind. This is how man rids himself of the spirit, mind, and nature of the beast. ***Man did not evolve from any other creature***, however Soul (Man) *did evolve in consciousness* through every level of consciousness *associated with* every kingdom or dispensation on earth. It was Soul itself (the Word or Voice of Spirit) that created all other earthly creatures and determined their kind, form, and purpose. Soul also gave them *identity* by giving each form of creation a name, including the assigning of the names Soul, man, and woman to itself.

As we have already stated, every Soul is a seed and it remains alone, as a man is without a woman, until the seed (Soul, or Word) is given new life and becomes a tree. So now we have described Man as a seed that has a tree within it. But Man is *not* a seed that will become a tree, because Man is a Soul (a seed) that is destined to become a Son of God after it (like any seed of creation) is quickened and given new life. A Soul must be born again in order to become a Son of God!

Every seed (word) holds within itself its own kind, form, and purpose. So then the Soul, which is called Man, is really a “*God Seed*.” It is also called the *Christ Seed*, and Christ is God. This Soul (Seed, Word, Voice, Man) that is housed within the flesh temple of man is dormant and it remains in the same state as any other seed until it is regenerated (or germinated). This Christ Seed within the flesh form called Man is lost in a sea of ignorance; it is dormant until it is begotten, quickened, and given new life by the Spirit of God. The Spirit of God (Life) unto salvation has appeared, or will appear to every Man (Soul). Every Soul may not recognize its visitation and therefore it may fail to accept its time of renewal or regeneration.

The seed (or Soul), which is Man, is like the egg within the woman. Until the egg within the ovaries of a woman makes contact with the sperm (Life / Spirit) of a man, there can be no regeneration through conception. Likewise, until the seed that is called Man is quickened by the Holy Spirit, it can never become or manifest the design that it holds within itself. Soul is, in fact, a *Man* in the *form* of a flesh seed; it will remain in this state until it is regenerated or given new life by being *born again*.

A tree is a seed that has been born again. At the moment a Soul-seed (Word) is quickened by the Spirit of God, new life begins and Christ is now being formed within the consciousness of that Soul. Just as the acorn is the source of an oak tree, so too is the Soul (or seed that is called Man) the source from which Christ is born. At the moment of conception (which is the quickening of the Soul or Christ Seed), there is an immediate effect in the heart



and mind of the individual who experiences this conception within. This is also referred to as the *Immaculate Conception*. This is the point, place, and time that the spirit of the mind begins to be renewed. *Until this regeneration begins, even though an outer appearance of a man's physical body or form may be expressing, the spirit that is within the man's form is the spirit or mind of a beast.* In his beastly state, however, he is the wisest and most glorious of all of the other beasts. In this state of unregeneration, the Soul called man (the natural, carnal mind) is the enemy of God and is anti-Christ (anti-Light / anti-Life).

By the renewing of the mind within Soul, there is a transformation of the conscious mind by the inner working of the Spirit of God. A change in Soul's *nature* also takes place at the same time that the mind is being renewed or regenerated. This is a process that unfolds over time. This is how the Soul / Man is *made* and *formed* into the likeness of God.

This renewal of man's mind and nature was the purpose for which the moral or carnal Law of Moses and the prophets was given. The Law of Moses and the prophets is the teacher (or schoolmaster) that was given to help in the process of regeneration. The carnal Law of Moses is referred to as "the bondwoman" who was given to man as a "help meet," and this Law is *both the deceiver and the deceived*. She was first called or given the name "woman" and later her name was changed to Eve.

This regeneration process that we have been discussing is -- literally -- the Soul consciousness and nature of one kingdom (or generation) being translated or transformed into another kingdom or state of consciousness. This renewing of the mind makes *all* things new. As Soul (Man) puts off the mind and nature of the beast, he puts on the mind and nature of a Man. As the mind continues to be renewed (transformed), Soul continues to evolve in consciousness and it will eventually attain a Christed state of mind. This is the manner in which a Soul enters into the Kingdom of God.

We could liken the evolution of Soul to a drop of water that becomes a small stream, then later a river, and afterward discovers the truth of itself and realizes that it is, in fact, the ocean itself.

Before the quickening takes place and the Christ mind begins to emerge, it is impossible for man to change his *nature*; therefore he *cannot change his behaviors*, any more than a leopard can change his spots. The transformation of the mind is the *only* manner in which his nature and behaviors can be changed.

The God seed is somewhat like the chicken that is *in* the egg that is still *in* the chicken. We understand that there is only a *potential* chicken, a *design* of a chicken, within the egg that is still within the chicken. So it is with the seed (Soul) called Man. While man is still in his beastly state of consciousness there is a Christ seed within him that is waiting to be quickened and regenerated. We can liken this state to the mother chicken who has the next *two* generations within her. Within every Soul there is a *potential* Christ mind or a body of Light Knowledge that is waiting to be born.

All of this has to do with the regeneration or transformation of the conscious mind. After the Christ Seed within Soul is quickened and the regeneration process has begun, the consciousness of Man begins to emerge out of darkness. He begins to leave behind his old beastly nature along with his beastly behaviors as he becomes aware of his need to change his ways. The beginning of this transition is facilitated by the Law of Moses and the prophets. As Soul puts on more and more of the *nature* of Man, it demonstrates less and less of its old beastly nature through changing its manner of thinking. This is called being renewed in the spirit of the mind.

After the Soul seed is quickened it is now a Living Soul. It received its new Life by the spirit of the dove -- the peacemaker. As it continues to grow by and through the knowledge of Truth, Soul's mind continues to be renewed. Man's *nature* becomes more and

more like Christ because he is, in fact, the Christ! This Christ child within will continue to grow in the knowledge of Truth and become more and more like his Heavenly Father, *Who is God!*

To describe it another way, while yet in a dormant, dead state, the Soul is as any other kind of *seed* that has not yet been planted or germinated. In fact, it not only has the design of a *Man's* consciousness and nature within it, but it also holds the *Christ mind and nature* within itself that ultimately will become the *Son of God! This is the three-in-one, or the three that are one: (1) the seed (man); (2) the tree (Christ); and (3) the fruit (God).*

The original plan was to *make and form* Man in the likeness of God. In order to accomplish this, Soul must put off its old nature, but it cannot do this until it has a *new mind*. The new Life within creates a new mind (the Christ Mind) and a new nature emerges.

When a Soul enters into the kingdom of Man it also has within it the kingdom of God! But everyone who is expressing in a bodily form as a man may *not yet have the mind or nature of Man* (let alone the consciousness of "the Son of Man"). It is by the continual renewing of the mind that Soul is, in fact, translated into or enters into the consciousness of each kingdom.

Leaving the beastly state of consciousness, the Soul enters the consciousness of Man. After the consciousness of Man, the Soul enters the consciousness of the Son of Man. Beyond the consciousness of the Son of Man, Soul enters the Christ Consciousness. Beyond the Christ Mind, Soul enters the fully-enlightened state of God Consciousness. What this means is that once Soul has left behind the mind and nature of the beast, it carries in it the seed of God that will grow into the fully mature God Mind. *It is a seed within a seed.*

As the tree is born out of the seed and the fruit is born out of the tree, so it is with Soul (Man). The Soul is as the seed -- in which is the Christ -- in which is God! So then, it is only a matter of

continuing in the Truth, and the knowledge of Truth will bring one into full Cosmic (God) Consciousness.

A continual renewing of the mind brings one into full Cosmic Mind. In so doing we are made partakers of God's Divine Nature. This is the manner in which we do as the apostle Paul instructed in Hebrews 6:1: "*Let us go on unto perfection.*"

Just as any kind of seed taken from the fruit of a fruit-bearing tree holds within itself the seed of *yet another tree* and a future generation to come of its own kind, so too does the Soul (or seed called Man) hold within itself the promise of its future generation or transformation into the Christ Mind (seed). In this seed awaits the expression of the fullness of the Godhead bodily!

This was always the plan and purpose that God intended for Man. God is Spirit wherein is all Life. This Spirit expresses Itself in whatever *form* It chooses and in whatever form that suits Its own purpose and pleasure. It pleased God (the Word) to take upon Itself the form of flesh and afterward call this flesh form *Man*. Following this, the mind of Man began its metamorphic process. As Man continues in Truth, being renewed (changed) in his mind, his name also changes. The name *Man* is changed to the name *Christ*, and Christ (when fully formed) is called *the Son of God*, which is God!

God (the Word) is made perfect (glorified, fulfilled, or complete) *in* Man. Man (Soul) is made perfect (glorified, fulfilled, or complete) *in* God. Cosmic Mind expressing in a bodily form as a Man is a *perfect Man*.

While Soul remains or is yet in the mind of a Man, it is in a state of consciousness that in the Scriptures is called *a child*. Even though this child is, in truth, a Son of God (seed), as long as the child has an immature mind, he or she lives like a servant instead of a Son. This is because the child does not yet have the Mind of Christ; therefore he or she is incapable of conducting life in

accordance with the authority and responsibility that God assigned to Man when he was but an idea in the Mind of Spirit (the Universal Cosmic Mind).

In the beginning, the purpose and intent of the Universal Cosmic Mind was to express and conduct the business of the universe in and through a tangible form. This form was given the name *Man*. While Soul (or Man) remains in the state of consciousness of a *child-God*, it does not know the purpose, way, and intent of God (its Father) because it does not yet understand the Law of Spirit. In I John 2:12, the apostle John called these child-Gods “little children.” As they grow into a mature state of consciousness they will learn more and more of the things concerning Spiritual Law. Like any earthly son, as the child grows, it takes on more and more of the mind, behaviors, and nature of its father. This is the manner in which Man evolves into the fullness of Light -- into a fully-grown, mature Son of God. This process results in Cosmic Illumination.

A newly conceived (begotten, or germinated) Soul is as an *embryo* in a mother’s womb. As it grows and takes on more and more of the nature and form of man, it is called a *fetus*. At full maturity, it is called a *son of man*. *This is a picture of the Soul’s three stages of growth once it has been quickened by the Spirit of God*. It is first called a living Soul (an embryo) and afterwards it is called Christ (the fetus). Then, at the fullness of its gestation time, it is called a Son of God. Or more simply said, it is then God incarnate. It is fully God (Cosmic Mind) expressing in bodily form.

To use another analogy, Man is as the seed; Christ is as the tree; and God is as the fruit. Man is Knowledge and Christ is Wisdom, out of which comes Understanding, or full God Consciousness.

As we have already said, the title of this chapter -- “Consider the Lilies: *How They Grow*” -- is taken from one of the parables of Jesus found in the sixth chapter of the Gospel of Matthew. In order to gain a better understanding of this parable, we will look

at another Scripture in John 15:5, where Jesus told his disciples that they were the branches and that he himself was the vine. In Zechariah 6:12 we read, “Behold the man whose name is the branch; and he shall grow up out of his place, and he shall build the temple of the Lord.” We understand that this temple that is spoken of here is a Spiritual Temple that shall be built (both *made* and *formed*). We have learned that the Saints (the Lilies) are the children of the branches. The branches are the true disciples of Christ that are the ministers to the church. The church is the temple of the Lord. The man whose name is “the branch” -- a disciple of Truth (Christ) -- shall grow up and he shall build the temple. I Corinthians 3:16 says, “*Know ye not that ye are the temple of God?*”

Given the fact that “ye are the temple of God,” we must also conclude that if you are a true disciple of Christ or a follower of Truth, then “ye are the man whose name is the branch,” since you are the builder of the temple of God. This temple is your eternal home, which is a Spiritual Body of Light.

Going back to the parable of the Lilies, if you read the sixth and seventh chapters of Matthew you can easily see that when Jesus said that “Solomon in all his glory was not clothed or arrayed like one of these” *he was comparing the Lilies (of the field) to Solomon’s wisdom*. This wisdom is the wisdom of man, or the earthly temple. It is through the Wisdom of God and Understanding of the Spiritual Law (a higher Wisdom) that we are able to construct the Body of Light that is our eternal, Spiritual Home.

If we continue to follow the words of Jesus, we learn that the *pearls* he spoke of in Matthew 7:6 consist of the jewels that are set in the Crown of Life. These jewels in the Crown are the Knowledge of the Holy that will be the reward for those who “endure to the end.”

“The end of what?” one may ask. I Peter 1:9 answers this question. Peter states clearly that “receiving the *end* of your faith is the salvation of your Soul.” This salvation is the Crown of Life, or God

Consciousness. When planting a seed (Faith), the gardener receives the end of the seed that he planted at its end -- at harvest time.

James 1:12 also gives us a clear understanding of what will at some point come to an end: "Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him." By this we see that it is the testings, provings, temptations, and trials of our Faith that *shall* come to an end. This is also the "end" of seedtime and harvest, or the cycles of birth and death.

Receiving the end of the Lilie is receiving the end of what began as a seed, which is the fruit of Faith. Faith is the root of the tree, out of which came the Lilie. The seed that the mature Lilie (the fruit) holds within it are the *jewels of heaven* that are set in the Crown of Life. The Crown of Life is Full Cosmic (or God) Illumination. The *jewels* are the holy words of God and they are the treasures of heaven! They are the words of Eternal Life. These jewels of God are *the Law of Life!*

We have talked extensively in this chapter about the idea of a seed, a tree, and its fruit. Let us once again consider this analogy. Since we are talking about receiving the *end* of our Faith, we must now look again at its beginning and consider once more *how it grows*. We are aware that those who follow the message of Jesus and his disciples are said to be the *seed* of Abraham. We understand that Abraham is called the *father* of Faith. He is also called "righteous Abraham." Jesus is called the *tree* of righteousness. By this we understand Abraham to be the *seed* of Faith (the beginning, which is Knowledge of Truth); Jesus to be the *tree* of Faith (the Wisdom of the Knowledge of Truth); and Jesus' true disciples to be the *fruit* of Faith -- the children of God (if they continue in his Word).

We know that a *seed* produces a *tree* of its own kind. We also understand that the Crown of Life belongs to the righteous -- the Saints of God. Let us now return to the *seed*, which is the

beginning of our righteousness. Romans 12:3 tells us that God has dealt to every man a *measure* of Faith. If you were to study this passage of Scripture, in it and many others you would find that *the measure* of Faith spoken of here is, in fact, a *God seed*. So then, the *end* of a God seed (Faith) is the *God fruit* of Faith. *The fruit of God is His Son!*

Let us now plant the *seed of Faith* that God dealt to every Soul and look at “how it grows.” This is the *seed* that was promised to come by the fathers of old. Scripture tells us that faith and grace come by the man Jesus Christ. We understand that Jesus was a man (a body of Truth Knowledge) sent from God that contains within him (it) a *message* of Life and Peace. Jesus was called the “Word” and the “Word” is called a *seed*. In this case, the seed is called the Knowledge of Truth, and it is also called the True Bread. This *seed* of Truth is quickened and new Life begins when an individual believes, receives, and conceives of this “God seed” -- the Truth! This conception takes place at the time of the visitation of the dove (when one receives the earnest of the Spirit). This is how Jesus was conceived in his mother Mary.

Jesus planted the seeds of Truth in the hearts and minds of those who believed and followed the message that he came into the world to deliver. He told his followers that they must *continue* in his Word in order to reach *the end of the metamorphic process*, wherein they would be free.

The evidence of the kind and nature of a seed is known by its fruit. The fruit manifests at harvest time or at the Lilie’s full maturity. The Word of Truth is called the Seed of Faith. At maturity, the Seed of Faith is a Son of God and it is fully God Incarnate!

When a seed is planted and quickened or germinated, it is transformed into the form of a root. As the new (root) form begins to grow and emerge out of the ground (mind) wherein it has been planted in the seed form, it descends down deep into the earth (the heart). It also begins its ascent upward out of the earth mind toward



the Heavenly Mind. In this manner the seed (Word) is lifted up from the earth as a tree, as Jesus instructed his followers to do.

As the root that bears the tree provides nourishment and stability to the tree that was taken out of it, the tree grows -- and in due time she begins to put forth her branches. We have already said that Jesus told his twelve disciples that they were the branches. They were also ordained as pastors, teachers, apostles, prophets, and evangelists. In other words, all of the twelve branches had all of the gifts or talents within each of them.

We understand that neither the root nor the tree brings forth *fruit* out of themselves. Rather, the tree that came out of the root, that came out of the seed, gives birth *to the branches*. We see that the seed has three generations, or you might say it has changed forms three times -- from root, to tree, to branches -- but it is still unable to extend its life beyond itself. Of course we know that if there were no *seed* there would be no *root*, and neither would there be a tree or branches. So it really is *all* in a *seed* -- *the Word of God*. For without the *Word* there could be nothing created that was and is created. With all of its different manifestations and operations through its continuous metamorphic process, it is nevertheless all *one Body of Truth*.

Let us now return to the branches that the mother (the tree) birthed out of herself. We have already discovered that the seed is the *word*, bread, or man "that is alone." It can, of itself, do nothing. In other words, it has no ability to reproduce itself while it remains in the *form of a dead seed*. Even if one were to go to the mill and grind the seed and make bread, man could still not live by this form of the word alone. Even though the blueprint or design of everything is within the seed and the bread, it is, however, *dead in the seed form and dead in the form of bread*. Even after it is eaten and becomes flesh (the woman, or wisdom), it still cannot reproduce itself since it remains alone (without the man).

But once the seed is given new life and form (new revelation) and now stands in its new form as a living body of Wisdom -- the tree -- it *now* has hope of its life being extended through coming generations. This is the seed “that was, and is not, but yet it is,” because it is now in another form, a new generation of itself. It now is a Father (the Root / Knowledge) and a Mother (the Tree / Wisdom) that came out of itself -- and these two are joined together by the Spirit of Life as husband and wife.

The tree now ascends far above the earth, producing children in the form of branches. But it is the root (the word) that is the source of life for the tree that remains firmly planted in the foundation (the earth). The branches are the servants of God that are called *the first fruit*. They too must produce children out of themselves if the root (the father) and the tree (the mother) and the sons (the branches, the first fruit or first generation) are to survive *beyond themselves* through future generations. *This is how they grow!* The first fruit are called the servants; they are the eldest and must serve the youngest. Every branch must bear fruit, or perish!

We now have the three that are one: the root, the tree, and the branches. If you count the “seed,” then we now have four members -- but only three remain. The seed has dissolved into the root and *is not, but yet it is*.

Remember that the root is the source of life for the tree and her branches. Each branch must now bring forth out of itself *a flower* in which is the long-awaited fruit whose seed for future generations are in itself.

The Lilies (the flowers of Faith -- the wisdom of God) are the Saints of God. The Lilies are the flowers (the “little children”) of the branches. The branches are the apostles, prophets, evangelists, teachers, and pastors, and they are given charge over their little children (the children of Faith). They birth the Lilies out of themselves. The branches provide covering for the Lilies by also bringing out of themselves leaves to protect the Lilies from the

wind, snow, rain, and burning sun (the trials and tests that life brings with it).

Over and over here in our study we have pointed out the need to “consider the Lilies -- *how they grow*.” I need to say here and now that the analogy of the “Lilie’s” growth -- its source of life and how it is protected -- is a picture of both the Soul’s beginning state as a seed (as Knowledge only) and the process of increased enlightenment as the Soul evolves into full Cosmic Illumination. We must consider (understand) how the *flower* of Faith (Soul) “grows” and becomes the *fruit* of Faith, a *Son of God*.

The seed (measure) from which everything else comes is the lifeless Soul. After it is quickened it is transformed by a continual state of metamorphic change and growth as it grows “from glory to glory” (increasing to bear more fruit and much more fruit.) The glory of the one state is not the glory of another state. For each level of progress that we attain in the evolution of our conscious mind there is a greater Inner Light (enlightenment, or glory) as we grow in the Knowledge of Truth.

The gifts (the apostles, pastors, teachers, evangelists, and prophets) are “set in the church.” You are the church in which they are set. They are in the church for the purpose of producing fruit (children), and afterward, to provide the necessary protection, teaching, and correction for the children’s growth and maturity. The children are the sanctified offspring of the righteous branches of the Tree of Righteousness who live by *Faith*. This Faith is the root -- their *father’s father*. The children are the Saints of God.

The Root of Faith is their *father’s father* and is their Source of Life. The branches are the ministers to the church (you). The branches are not only given charge over the Saints, to protect, teach, and correct them, but their work also includes edifying the body of Christ (the church or temple of God) which is *their mother*, the Tree. They are also ordained to bring the *flowers* (which are the Lilies -- the Saints) to perfection, which is full maturity.

What this literally means is simply this: the Lilies are the sanctified Souls that are not yet fully Christed. They are the growing Sons of God who are not yet mature or fully enlightened by Spirit. It is exceedingly important that the branches that are the gifts and ministers (the servants) of the church carefully protect and nurture these little sanctified ones, because if the Lilies do not endure *unto the end*, then a whole generation is lost.

We started out with a *seed* (Soul) alone. Then it was quickened and given new Life -- it was *born again*. It is now a root and a tree, which are one. These *two are one*, and they have brought out of themselves branches. The branches have brought out of themselves leaves and flowers, but "*the end is not yet*"! Receiving *the end* of your Faith is the salvation of your Soul and Eternal Life! Until the fullness of times (the last harvest), at which time the fruit is fully ripe, the end of the metamorphic process is not yet!

The *end* result depends entirely on the endurance of the Lillie. The Lillie (which is the flower of Faith) is made perfect by becoming mature fruit whose seed are in itself. This is the ultimate prize. The seed that are found in the mature, fully enlightened Lillie (the Saint of God) is the Body of Knowledge that is called "the Knowledge of the Holy." This is the full Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life and *is* the Law of Life!

What all of this means is that you are a Soul. God has given every Soul that is called Man a measure or seed of Truth (Faith) within its design. After it is quickened by the Spirit of God, it becomes a Living Soul. From here it becomes the *Father of Faith*, a Root of Righteousness. The Root now bears out of itself the Tree of Life and its fruit holds within itself the Sons of God, the everlasting Word of God. These are the Jewels or Treasures of Heaven.

The original seed (the Word of Truth called Faith) is called the Knowledge of Truth, out of which comes the Wisdom of Truth. Out of these two (which are now one) comes the fruit of both Knowledge and Wisdom, which is Understanding. This child of

Knowledge and Wisdom is called “the Knowledge of the Holy.” This is the child of the Immaculate Conception.

The Body of Knowledge (the Word of Truth) belongs only to the children of Faith, and it is the seed of the Eternal Law of Spirit. When Soul first becomes conscious of this Body of Knowledge, it begins to think as a Man. By and through the renewing of its mind -- in this manner the beastly mind and nature is left behind. Then out of this new Body of Knowledge will come the Christ Mind. The Christ Mind is the Mind that has the Wisdom of God. Through this Wisdom comes “the Knowledge of the Holy,” *which is Understanding*.

As Soul continues to live by this Law (Truth), it will continually grow in the Knowledge of God. This Living Body of new revelation will eventually bring every Soul who follows its leading to its end: full Cosmic Consciousness. This is the only way a Soul will ever be able to come to *the end* of the cycle of birth and so-called death. This is the only way it will reach its full potential. Yes, Soul must be born again and again -- *until it is begotten by God!*

This is “how they grow” from a *seed* of Truth (which is a God seed, since God is Truth) to an eternal Christed body of Light that is called the *Tree of Life!* It is also called the “Bride of Christ,” or the body of Christ.

Christ is the Light. God is Light. God is Spirit and Life. This Christed, enlightened state of consciousness is called Cosmic Mind or God Consciousness.

As we have considered the analogy of the Lilies and *how they grow*, we have discovered that it is quite a process. The seed, which is the Word of Truth that we receive in our hearts and minds, goes through quite a number of changes after it is quickened or born again. But each time it takes on a new form (member), its kind and nature always remains the same. So the body has many members manifesting between the seed, the root,

and the fruit. It started with a seed and it ended with a seed. *It started with God (the word that had no Life in it) and it ended with God the Spirit (or Living Word) manifesting in a form called Man!*

Soul attains to this level of God (or Cosmic) Consciousness through receiving spiritual revelations on many levels of enlightenment. This is why we must patiently continue in the Word of Truth to its end! On every level of consciousness that Soul attains it is in a race for its very Life. But only the one who *finishes* the race will win the prize!

We can now see *the end* of what began as only an image or an idea that was in Cosmic Mind at the time the decision was made concerning the *forming* and *making* of Man. It was at the meeting of the Great Heads of Council of Cosmic Mind that it was said, "Let us *make* man in our own likeness." In other words, That Which Was Formless so loved the idea of conducting the business of the universe through a tangible form that It was willing to pay the ultimate price in order to do so.

The Pearl of Great Price is the Christ Seed -- the God Knowledge -- which holds within itself the *Tree of Life*, or God Wisdom. This Body of Wisdom bears branches that bear the Lilies that bear the Pearls which are *the Treasure of Heaven, a body of Knowledge wherein is Understanding*. The Mind that holds within it this Body of Knowledge (of the Law of the Spirit of Life) has the Crown (Consciousness) of the Sons of God. *This is the end of our Faith! This is very God!* This Pearl of Great Price is a Living Soul called Man, whose mind is ultimately transformed into the likeness of God and is God Incarnate when it reaches full maturity.

In Matthew 7:6, the pearls of wisdom that Jesus warned not to cast before swine are the seeds of Knowledge of the Words of Life. They are the jewels that are within the Lilies, the flowers of Faith. They are the eternal, everlasting, Living Law of Spirit and Life! *The swine are the minds that are yet carnal, that cannot receive nor comprehend the things of the Spirit because Truth is spiritually discerned!*

This is why we *must* consider the Soul and *how it grows to full maturity!* Until one is sufficiently enlightened, he *cannot* receive and thereby conceive of the Seeds of Truth!

The Soul (Man) that you are (in earth form) has a unique design that has been carved or engraved through the process of your earth journey. The whole story of your evolution as Soul can be known by understanding what you have experienced on earth *by and through* your forefathers -- your genealogy or ancestors. We are all descendents of the first Adam. Each Soul holds within it the genes of all previous generations.

As each generation of Souls descends from its forefathers (ancestors), at the same time of its descent it is also experiencing its ascent! The descent is *from* the last generation and the ascent is *toward* the next generation. Every Soul is always between two generations: the one in the past and the one in the future. When a Soul has reached its full potential, which is full, Cosmic Enlightenment, this generation will be the end of the descent! There will be no more descendents from this Soul. It will embody the fullness of *all* of its past ancestors or forefathers! This is *the One* (generation) that will receive the prize - the Crown of Life! But you need to know that when *the One* is glorified, fulfilled, and complete, so will *the Whole* be also! **O MAN, KNOW THYSELF!**

When Man has reached the end of the process of being formed and made in the likeness of God, then Man shall be fully God Incarnate!

*Names* (words, or titles) are given for the purpose of *identity* (identification). The unique, Divine design of the Soul that is now expressing in a flesh body -- as a Man, as *you* -- has a mark of identity engraved upon it from each of your previous generations through your forefathers. ***There is not another like you.***

The names of your forefathers hold within them a description of your persona, since you were in each of your forefathers' loins during their earth experiences. An in-depth study of the definitions

of *your* name and the names of your forefathers will give you much insight into who, what, and where you are on your journey to perfection (Spiritual Enlightenment). The state of consciousness that was present in each of your forefathers when they were in bodily form made a mark on your Soul because you were in their loins. This is why every fingerprint and every Soul is different. ***You really are one of a kind.***

Following is a short list of my own genealogy. You will notice that I started with my great-grandparents. Each name listed, including my own, has a biblical definition that identifies a state of consciousness. But whether or not your name or your ancestors' names are found in the Bible, each name represents a state of consciousness that makes a mark on the Soul's descendents.

The markings (engravings) of and on the Soul are recorded in what is known as the *Akashic Records*. These records are forever and ever a part of you, and *are* you. *You are your forefathers, descended.*

I am the granddaughter of my grandmother *Phoebe*, who was the daughter of her father, *Thomas*, and her mother, *Mary*.

I am the daughter of my father, *James Thomas*.

I am the sister of my two brothers, *David* and *Jesse*.

I am the wife of my husband *James*.

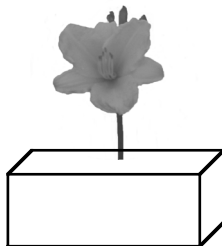
I am the mother of my son *Thomas*.

I am *Lillie Pearl!*





***Thus saith the LORD: The heaven is my throne, and the earth  
is my footstool. Where is the house that ye build unto me,  
and where is the place of my rest?***



## Chapter 19

### **THE ABODE OF GOD IS** **THE WORD OF GOD**

Throughout the writing of this book I have not used others' writings as references except when I have referenced the Holy Scriptures, using the original King James version.

\*\*\*

In John 14:2, Jesus said, "In my Father's *house* are many *mansions*: if it were not so, I would have told you. *I go to prepare a place for you.*" The *house* spoken of here is another *temple*, which is a new body of knowledge -- not new words, but new revelations.

As a seed is the dwelling place of a tree and holds within it all that the tree will ever be, so are our words (seed) our own dwelling place. If we say that the Holy Spirit of God dwells in us, then since God is holy, our *words* are holy and our words are the (holy) *temple* of a holy God. Our words are the *dwelling place* of God as well as our own dwelling place!

God is Spirit. God is Life. God is Love. God's Spirit quickens and gives life to our words. Truly, in the same way that God's word tells it all, likewise our words tell exactly what is within us and exactly what is *not* within us. We are indeed judged by our words.

*The word "abode" means a room; a dwelling place; where one lives or abides; or the place one calls home. Consider the following correlations between terms, and note the Scripture verses that are listed for each correlation. You will see that the abode of God is the word of God.*

Abode / habitation = temple.

Temple = body.

Body = seed.

Seed = word.

The *abode* of God is the *word* of God.

*Abode / habitation = temple:*

- Ephesians 2:21-22: In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy *temple* in the Lord (Spirit): In whom ye also are builded together for *an habitation of God* through the Spirit.
- 1 Corinthians 3:16-17: Know ye not that ye are the *temple* of God, and that the Spirit of God *dwelleth* in you? ... For the *temple* of God is holy, which *temple* ye are.

*Temple = body:*

- I Corinthians 6:19: Know ye not that your *body* is the *temple* of the Holy Ghost...?
- John 2:21: But he spake of the *temple* of his *body*.

*Body = seed:*

- I Corinthians 15:38: But God giveth it a *body* as it hath pleased him, and to every *seed* his own *body*.
- I Corinthians 15:44: It (the *seed*) is sown a natural *body*; it is raised a spiritual *body*.

*Seed = word:*

- Luke 8:11: Now the parable is this: The *seed* is the *word* of God.
- I Peter 1:23: Being born again, not of corruptible *seed* (that is, not of the doctrine and commandments of men), but of incorruptible, by the *word* of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. (The doctrines and commandments of men shall pass away.)

These verses I have listed here demonstrate that the word of God *is* the abode of God. We also know that the word of God *is* God. John 1:1-5 says: "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word

was with God, and the *Word was God*. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.” Therefore we see that since the word of God is God, and God abides in His word, then *God abides in Himself!*

Let us read Malachi 3:1: “Behold, I will send my messenger (Jesus, with a message of peace and hope), and he shall *prepare the way* before me: and the Lord (Spirit), whom ye seek, *shall suddenly come to his temple*, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord of hosts.”

The “coming” to the temple mentioned here is not to be understood in the sense of someone coming *from* one place *to* another. Rather, it means that the Spirit will *manifest Its Presence in Its temple where It already abides*. So don’t be thrown off by the word “coming” -- thinking that the word means the Spirit will come *from and to* a place. The only place It is coming to is your conscious awareness of the Spirit that is already present! God, which is Spirit, is everywhere present at all times, and obviously has no place to come *from* or any place to go *to* where It is not, already! The *preparing of the way* spoken of in Malachi 3:1 and in John 14:2 (quoted earlier in this chapter) is the preparation of your heart to enable you to acknowledge the ever-abiding Presence of the Great I Am *within you*.

We often use many words that sound altogether different, but in biblical language they have the same meaning. Terms like *temple*, *body*, *seed*, and *word* -- all depict the same meaning: the abode of God, which is the *Word*.

Let us envision the shape of an eye that is similar in shape to some kinds of seed. In the *center* of it is the place where it has its being. Its new life, form, and purpose also have their beginnings here. The outer

shell is its house or covering. The substance between the outer shell and the center of the eye, or seed, is where it gets its form. The center of the eye / seed is the origin of its seeing and is the source of its light, wherein is life. The Eye is the Light of the body / man / soul / word .

In Matthew 6:22, Jesus said that “the light of the body (seed – word) is the eye.” The eye is the *prophet*, or *seer*. The dead seed (words) of the prophets of old, those who are asleep in Christ -- whose eyes are closed -- must be awakened. These dead-in-Christ-seed are within us, and as they are quickened (resurrected) by the Spirit within, then we will see our way clearly!

Our words are containers (lamps) wherein is the oil of anointing (which is Spirit, or the illumination of Substance) that gives *Light* and *Life* to our words and their effects. When we speak or preach about *Jesus*, we preach (speak) by the flesh (or the outer form / shell) and we build the earthly house; this is the word or seed alone, without the Spirit and Life. When we preach (speak) *Christ* (the inner or heavenly form, which is the Substance within), then our words give Light, and the Life is in the Light. These words are our Christed words (illuminated or resurrected or living words). In this way we build the Spiritual House, which is the abode of God. This is His Holy Temple.

Other verses teach us that the “way” of Life is to make *our* abode in Truth, and then Truth will *abide in* us. In John 15:7, Jesus said, “If ye *abide in me*, and my words *abide in you*, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.” In John 14:23, He said, “If a man loves me (I am the way, the truth and the life), he will keep my words: and my father will love him, and *we* will come unto him and make our *abode with him*.” In John 6:63, Jesus said, “The words that I speak unto you, they are *spirit* and they are *life*.” The “we” Jesus spoke of here refers to Jesus -- the Word -- and the Father, which is the Spirit and Life of the Word.

So these verses tell us that if the words of Truth (God) *abide* in you, then Spirit and Life also *abide* in you.

*God is Spirit. God is Light. God is Life. Christ is the Light.* We have many references throughout the Scriptures that report that God is Light; that God is Life; and that Christ is the Light. During our study here, we need to keep this in mind. It will help us to see the connections between God, Life, Light, Christ, and Spirit more clearly.

In Galatians 5:25, the apostle Paul wrote, “If we *live in* (abide in or are at home in) the Spirit (Living Word), let us also walk in the Spirit.” To walk in the Spirit means to be occupied therein; to conduct one’s life thereby; to follow and adhere to; and to walk in an orderly fashion -- temperate in everything.

Our Life (Soul) is hid in Christ (Light) with God (Spirit)! The Good Word is the power of Spirit that we must find. God is the Word! If then God is the Word, then the Word or Good Seed is God!

The word “God” means “good” -- so when we speak of the *word of God* then we are speaking of the good word or good seed. Jesus called it the good news. In Mathew 13:37-38 in the parable of the wheat and the tares, Jesus said, “He that soweth the good seed is the son of man ... the good seed are the children of the kingdom.” The *good seed* means that these words are the true bread or words of Truth. The Scriptures refer to our *words* as *our children* and also call them the good seed or Words of Truth -- which are the children of the kingdom of God. These children of the kingdom of God are the Knowledge of the Holy.

When you find that which is lost (your true Self Identity), you will find the promised seed or word which is pregnant with your Soul and your life. Just as an acorn holds within itself the kind, form, and purpose of the oak tree, so the promised seed (word or Soul) that is lost holds within itself all that it is or ever will become. This Soul or seed is called Man.

When the word (seed) is quickened (given life) by the Spirit of Life, then it is the *living word of God*! Man became the living word, or a “living Soul,” which is Christ. The good seed (Truth) is the God

seed, or you may say it this way: the *true word* is the *true God*. God and the word of God are the same. At this quickened stage of enlightenment of the Soul (Man), this seed is no longer called the Word-of-God, but it is now called the Christ-of-God. It is also called the Tree of Life. This Tree holds within it the Son-of-God, which is the Knowledge of the Holy, or Understanding of Truth.

So then, if you possess within you the good or God seed (or word), when *you speak*, *who* is speaking and *what* is being spoken? That which is spoken is the same as he who does the speaking -- is it not? How can one "speak" the *Word of God* and not be the thing that is spoken? How can anyone do the "work of God" and not be *God at work*? The word and the work are one and the same.

I Corinthians 9:13-14 says, "Do you not know that they which minister about holy things *live* of the things of the *temple* (word, or truth)? The Lord ordained that they who preach the gospel (Truth) should *live* of the gospel (word)."

If when God speaks, He speaks His own word -- and the word and God are *One* -- then the word is the same whether spoken or unspoken. But what relationship does this have with you? How can you speak the word *of* God and be someone or something different from the thing which you have spoken? Is a tree different from the fruit it produces out of itself? No! The seed which produced the tree, as well as the tree, are both in the fruit, but each has a different *form* and purpose. The *kind* is the same, however. An apple seed produces an apple tree which produces an apple fruit.

Before the beginning of the creative process, the word was unspoken and was with or within God / Spirit. God is Spirit, so the word must be Spirit in order to be in, or dwell with God, or in fact be God (Spirit). So then, do the words somehow become *not Spirit, not God, or not good seed* once they have been spoken? No! So if both during and before the beginning of the creative process the word *was*, and the word was *with* (within) God (Spirit), and the word *was* God, then the word of God *is* Spirit -- since



God changes not! If then the Life is in the Spirit and the word *is Spirit*, then the *Life* must be *in* the *Word*! So our Life is held or *dwells* within the Word, which is Spirit and Light and is called Christ. The word became a Soul and Soul is called Man, and this Soul / Man when quickened or given new life by the Spirit of God becomes the Christ, out of which comes the Son of God!

Jesus said, “*My words, they are Spirit and they are Life.*” He could have said, “My words are Light and the Light is the Christ.” Here we see that not only are the Spirit and Life *in* the word -- but they *are* the word and they *are* the Living Christ seed.

Let us go back to the idea of the good seed or word. Scripture tells us that there is none good but God. What does this mean? Well, it says that there are no *good seeds* (words) except the *seeds* or *words of God*. We see this depicted in the tree of the knowledge of good and the knowledge of evil. The knowledge of good (seed of good) is the seed or word of God, and the knowledge of evil is the corrupt seed or seed of man -- born of the fleshly, carnal, or natural mind of man. Notice it does *not* say that the *knowledge is evil* or that the *tree is evil*, but rather it says that anyone who will eat of this fruit will *know* or believe in the *knowledge of evil* or they will believe the knowledge they possess is evil. It cannot be evil however, since all knowledge belongs to God. The *evil* that comes from this tree’s fruit is man’s belief in duality (good and evil) -- and man is thereby double minded or divided against himself.

The knowledge of (or belief in) evil teaches that “*this* is good and *that* is evil!” This tree, of course, is a carnal, fleshly body of knowledge and is of the spirit (the blood or wisdom) of man. This tree (or knowledge of evil) is also called “the bondwoman (the tree) and her son (her fruit).” Jesus called this Law (or body of knowledge) “the commandments and doctrines of men.” Remember: there is none good but *God*, and God said, “*All is good.*”

In Galatians 4:30, the apostle Paul said, “cast out the bondwoman and her son.” In other words, to *abide* in the “Knowledge of Good” we must cast out any belief in the “knowledge of evil.”

We are also told that “all power (knowledge) is of God” (Romans 13:1). So then where does all of the evil that is *believed* to exist come from? Since God (good) *is all* and *in all*, and God or Spirit works *all* things together for good, how is it that we insist on fighting to the death -- *killing ourselves* -- by rejecting the truth that all things are good and therefore *of God*? The Scriptures tell us that man “calls evil good and good, evil” (Isaiah 5:20). How can there be evil *anywhere* if God is *everywhere present* and all things live and move and have their being in God (good)?! Remember: if God is Spirit, then so are all things Spirit! If all Life is in Spirit and God is Spirit and there is one God and One Spirit, then there is only one source of Life; if you are alive, then the only place you can be alive is in Spirit and Light. Then you, too, must be Spirit and Life, and therefore Good or God. O Man, know Thyself!

Based on what we have just learned, it is impossible that we are something apart from our own words -- which are, in fact, the source of the creation of our very own Soul Self. If God and His Word are one, then you and your words are also one. If *all* is good (God), then all knowledge or words are good (or God) and are therefore Spirit and Life. Just because mankind may not understand all of the *good within all knowledge* does not make it evil.

Scripture tells us that “in every house there are vessels (words) of honor and vessels of dishonor.” Adam had two sons -- Cain and Able. Able was an honorable son (seed, word, vessel) and Cain was a dishonorable son (seed, word, vessel). Both sons came from the same household and both from the same father. This is a picture of both Jesus the word in the fleshly (dead) form, and Jesus the Word in the Spirit (living) form. This living word can also be called the Christed or Enlightened Word. The living word in the form of Knowledge is called Jesus Christ. Looking at it another

way, we see Jesus the Word in seed form, and Jesus the Word in tree form. The seed is dead until it is planted and quickened and afterward manifests as a tree. The tree which came out of the Knowledge is called Wisdom, or Christ Jesus. The seed is the Knowledge (man alone); the tree is the Wisdom (woman) which came out of Knowledge (man); and the Understanding which comes out of both the man (Knowledge) and the woman (Wisdom) is called "the Knowledge of the Holy," or the children of God.

The following Scripture gives us a clear picture of the resurrection of the dead seed (or word). Of course, all of this takes place within our hearts and minds:

I Corinthians 15:42-49: "So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body (of knowledge), and there is a spiritual body (of knowledge). And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy (the word in the form of flesh): the second man is the Lord from heaven (revelation knowledge, which are the children of the Wisdom of God). As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy (natural mind): and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly (Christ Mind). And as we have borne the image of the earthy (the carnal mind of man), we shall also bear the image of the heavenly (the Mind of Christ)."

So what then does all of this really mean? It simply means that by our carnal, natural mind -- by our works of imagination and our belief in evil because of our ignorance of Truth -- we create in our mind images of false gods by which we build a temporal house (earthly, fleshly, and mortal). *But when we speak words of Love and Truth (which are Wisdom and Understanding), then we are building our spiritual or heavenly eternal temple.* When we speak

words by the body of Knowledge alone, devoid of Wisdom and Understanding, then we are speaking “by the letter only,” or by man’s carnal mind -- and there is no Life in our words and they fall to the ground and pass away.

*You* are the builder of your immortal house, and the stones from which it is built are *your* immortal words of Truth and Light. The Knowledge of God (the Peace of God) is the good seed --the true bread of Life. The Wisdom of God is the Love of God, which is the Living (or Christ) seed. Together, these two -- Peace and Love, which are Knowledge and Wisdom -- give birth to Joy, which is the Son of God, or the Understanding of the Law of the Spirit of Life. This body of Understanding is the house (or *place*) that Jesus said he (the Word) would prepare for those who believe his message, receive it, and do it by continuing in it.

This union of Peace and Love is the immaculate conception that is the only way to bring forth the Son of God, through the one Spirit. The holy seed (Word, Soul, or Man) brings forth the holy tree (the tree of Life). This tree is the body (or form) of the gift of the Word of Wisdom mentioned in I Corinthians 12:8. The Spirit (the Father) is the Life of this body of Wisdom. This tree gives birth to the new man -- the Son of God -- which is the Knowledge of the Holy.

This Son of God is called the *Knowledge of the Holy*, which is Understanding. This understanding is a new, spiritual body of knowledge -- *not new words*, but new revelations or understanding! This body of knowledge is eternal, and the one who finds or possesses this body of Christ Knowledge or Knowledge of Light will possess eternal Life in the Spirit.

None of this is about a man, but it is all about a message or a body of Truth-knowledge -- or knowledge of Truth. It is Spirit and it is Life. This is the true Word of Life to which every Soul that is quickened by the Spirit of God is destined to awaken in the fullness of times.

The good seed or God Knowledge is the bridegroom, out of which the bride is taken! The wisdom of God (woman) that is taken out of *man* (the good seed) is the bride of Christ, or mother of us all, the Tree of Life. The seed / knowledge that is born of her (this Tree of Life) are the children (sons and daughters, or words) of God! Wisdom is justified in her children. Her children are the Words of eternal Life. This is a new body of knowledge that is called “the Knowledge of the Holy” -- ***not new words, but New Revelations.***

So when you speak the words of God (good seed) *with understanding*, you are building for yourself an eternal house (kingdom) in the Spirit. And *you will live* in this self-built house (mansion) forever. You, as God (Spirit) will, as you do *now*, dwell or live within your *own words* that come out of your *own mouth* -- forever. Your body of knowledge is the true, Living Word that is the *temple (or abode) of God*.

Are your words the words of God (Truth), spoken with understanding? Then you are working the work of God or Spirit by speaking the words of Life and Truth.

You are now building within you the Kingdom of God *that you are the King of*, wherein you shall dwell forever. Wherever your words go, you go with them and live your life in them and through them. If you speak and another person receives your living words of Truth (Christed words), the words will give Life by revelation to the recipient. This is how you live within these recipients -- through the living words that you spoke and they received with understanding. In this way, you live in them and they live in you, and you are one with them.

These are the mysteries of the creation of God, or the creation of the Soul of Man which *is* Man. Some believe man to *have* a Soul, but this is incorrect because the truth is that man *is a Soul!* This living water (body of knowledge) or good seed, is God, and it is You! You are in it and it is in you. Your life is *hid* with Christ

(Light) in God (which is Spirit). This makes you a Spirit being and you have your being in Spirit only. The living Word of Spirit, or Christ Seed, *is God*, and it is nigh thee, ***even in your mouth!***

All things that I desire *I am!* I am both the one that creates the desire of my heart and the creator of the thing desired. If I am the word that creates, then I am the God of the created thing. Since there is the knowledge (power) of Life in my mouth (words), then I can give Life to whomever I will. When anyone speaks words of Truth with Understanding (which is called Substance or Faith), his or her words are Spirit and they are Life. This is the means by which all things are and were created! This is the manner in which the true work of God is accomplished. There is no other way. Any other way is but an imagination, and is as the flower of the grass in a burning heat. It will soon perish and pass away. This Word of Truth, however, will *never* fail or pass away.

It is now time for all religions to step aside and make room for Truth. For many generations, mankind has existed in a sorry state, participating in religious rituals and believing in the false doctrines of men, while lifting up in his own mind images of some God outside of himself. Because of this, Souls are steeped in a quagmire of ignorance, confusion, and total despair. Very few have found or will find their way out of this long, dark night of the Soul until there is a major change in religious belief systems and teachings.

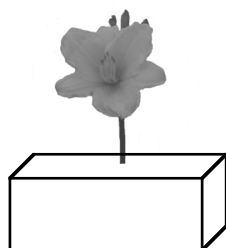
I pray that you, the reader, will set your mind and heart to seek and not give up until you find the *Truth about the Truth*. The one Spirit who is the Revealer of all Truth will surely lead you out of this place of hopelessness -- this maze of ignorance -- into the marvelous Light of God. *Traditional religious doctrines of man and religious philosophies will not!*

The labor required to build this house (mansion) that is the *Abode of God* is well worth the time and cost to do so! ***Not only is this house the Abode of God, but it is also your own Abiding Place forever!***



***The seed that is unwilling to die to its present form --is  
also unwilling to live.***

***Trust the Nature of your true Divine Design.***





## Chapter 20

### **I AM MY OWN FATHER**

This is a riddle. Can you interpret it?

I am my own father. I am a descendent of myself. I descended from myself. I am the one who foreknew myself and predetermined myself to be who and what I am. Every Soul keeps descending and ascending from itself. Yet the self that descends, being the self that is, is not the self that ascended before it descended -- yet it is!

He (the I Am Self) that cometh after me is preferred before me because he was before me. I was before I am, and I shall be the same after I am not the I am that now is. I change not. I was the same before (yesterday) as I am today, and I shall be the same tomorrow and forever; I change not!

I am Spirit, I am Life. I am the Word. I was the Word before, and I was Spirit and Life, and I shall be the same forever -- whether in form or out of form. I had no beginning and I shall have no end. I have no mother or father. I *am* myself and I am *of* myself -- I and my father are of one seed. I was my father before I am my father's son. My son's father shall be my son. I am the son of my father that shall be my son. I am the father of the son that shall be my father.

He that descended is the same that ascended. He that descended is the same that foreknew him that shall ascend. The ascending and descending is but the incarnation and reincarnation of the same Soul. He that is first is also last, and is the same that is here and now. I am the beginning and the end of myself, in form or out of form or in any and all forms.

A seed is the father of a tree. A tree is the descendent of a seed that ascended up out of itself. The fruit of the tree is the proof or evidence of the kind of tree it is. The seed within the fruit will descend into the earth that they may ascend up into the heavens (open space). No matter how many generations may appear in the process, the *kind* never changes.

The *times and forms* are constantly in a state of change, ascending and descending, one before and another after the other -- but all are one and the same. There is no real death here; there is simply one metamorphic state after the other. But the one, original seed never diminishes or changes in *kind* -- this is true even though it is in a constant state of change in form, seasons, times, and perhaps in purpose -- just as a seed in the form of a tree can be used in various ways. It can be left alive to produce fruit for food, or it can be cut down and used in a myriad of ways, but its life would end there. All of these many uses are after the death of the tree. However, if before its death it produced fruit and the seed within the fruit are planted and become a tree, then the tree that was cut down, although it is dead -- lives on!

Each new beginning or form is a descendent of itself and also ascends out of itself. So each tree comes after the seed, but *was* before -- in the seed from which the tree ascended. The seed within the fruit of the tree are descendents of the original seed, but are in fact the same that ascended (in tree form) out of the original (father) seed. So the descendents (which are the seed in the fruit) of the tree that ascended out of the seed are the children that are born of the mother (tree), and they too must descend (die) in order to ascend into heaven, or become a life-giving tree.

Nothing can reproduce itself in its own present or original form without first being changed into another form. In other words, a seed cannot just reproduce out of itself more seed. It must first be willing to put off its original (present) form in order for its life to be extended beyond itself. Yet when it is in another form, though its old self (form) has passed away, it is still *itself* in its new form.

It is now in another time that is after the time when itself was in the original seed form. Itself is the self-same self as before, and it shall be hereafter the self-same self. Times, seasons, forms, and sizes change, but the kind and the self itself *never* change.

All things concerning myself were made by myself and for myself. All things that I am, I am of myself. I make all things according to my own will! The will to become a tree (and live) is held within the seed. If the seed (soul) is willing to die *once* in order to become a tree by which to live, then its life is assured so long as it produces fruit out of itself whose seed is in itself. But, if it is not willing to *trust the design of itself*, wherein is the power of resurrection that is held within itself, then it shall perish within itself and its *remembrance* shall be no more.

In order for the power of the resurrection to manifest itself through itself, itself must first die in order to be lifted up from the earth and become a new (man) life-form. The seed (soul or man) that is unwilling to die to the present self form, is also unwilling to live. The will to live is held within the will to die. This is not to literally die in the absolute sense, but to die to the present, earthly way and manner of thinking and doing. The seed that is not willing to die in order that it might live in another form (a tree), is selfish -- and it is, in fact, its own source of eternal death. The seed that is not willing to put off its present form in order to be resurrected in newness of life shall perish within itself, no matter how many generations may be in its past. The now-decision (or will) is the *only generation that will determine its future*. Its ascension is held within its death. So then, no death -- no life.

It is appointed to every seed (soul) once to die (to the carnal mind, the enemy of Life), but after the death of the seed, then will come the judgment that is after the resurrection of the dead. The proof of the tree is in the kind of fruit it bears; *it is its own judge*. The just or justified (or acceptable) tree is justified in her children. Her children are the seed held within her womb that are hidden within her fruit. This is the Tree of Life, born out of the original seed (Truth) that

gave up its own form of life that it may be resurrected in a new form and gain eternal Life.

Its own life is not held within another, but rather each soul is a self-contained unit and it either decides *to die to live forever*, or it chooses *to live for a season to die forever*. It is far better to die (give your life to live) than to choose the pleasures of this life (only in a seed form), just to die and pass away.

We have talked in depth about a seed and a tree with its fruit. Now let us look at what this is really all about. Your words are your seed. They are your children and therefore are your descendents. When they descend into the ground (mind of another) and are resurrected in newness of life, they ascend in the form of a life-giving tree. This is revelation knowledge that is rooted and grounded in love (wisdom) within the heart and mind of another. Because you and your words are one, you are now living your life *through another*. You are now transformed from the form of words / seed / knowledge into a new form that is wisdom -- *a life-giving tree*. You are now able to give life to as many as will hear the words of the one in whom you planted your seed. This is eternal life. Their words are your descendents, which are your grandchildren. The “other” that you are now living your life *through* is, in fact, the “other” that is *you*.

Every word of Truth (God seed) that you have ever spoken has been in the past, or will be at some point in time quickened and resurrected to newness of life -- either within yourself or within someone else who has heard and received your words. These not-yet-resurrected words of Truth are those that are the “dead in Christ.” The seeds in the womb of a woman are dead until they are quickened by the sperm of the man and resurrected to newness of life. The “Woman” here is the Christ or the Love of God, which is the Wisdom of God. Out of Wisdom comes Understanding. This body of Understanding is called the children of God or the Knowledge of the Holy.

This is how the kingdom of God is built. Every good (God) seed must be planted (die) *once*, after which it is resurrected as a life-giving tree, able to give food to the hungry and drink to the thirsty. The life-giving fruit (the Wisdom of God) from this tree will set the captive free and open prison doors to those seed that died in the faith (truth) and did not receive the resurrection (revelation, or understanding) that was promised. The tree ascends out of the seed, but it is the Spirit (Light) that is its Life Source.

To the reader: My request and prayer is that you will read, then meditate and re-read this chapter and the entire book until you have a clear understanding of what this is all about. It is extremely important that you know exactly *how this all relates to you here and now*, and to your future. It has nothing whatsoever to do with your past, because all of your past is held within your present state, time, and form. It is your present decisions that shall determine the future. The present moment is the *fruit* of all of the past experiences of one's life, and this present moment is the *seed* which holds within it the design of all eternity.

I speak not of any religious doctrines or dogmas. I speak only of the manner of the working of the universal law of life and death. This is a spiritual law that governs all of creation. This law is the only source of Life for all created things -- present, past, and future.

As I have already stated, you are a *self-contained unit*. Your own self-will, determination, and action are the only things that will or can determine the result that will be experienced by you! The result is totally and completely held in your own hands! No other person holds your life in their hands (works). You *only* have this right, responsibility, honor, and privilege. The only one you are indebted to is yourself, and the only one that can bail you out is yourself.

You can read "how to" books, but it is you and you alone that shall take the action that will determine the outcome. Again: *you* will choose to die (to your present nature) so that you may live (be renewed in your mind), or you will choose to live (for a season

-- in your present state) that you may perish forever, never to be re-membered again. There shall be no more remembrance of the seed (word) *who refuses to die to live!* Greater Love (Wisdom) hath no man than this, that a man (seed) lay down his life for his friend (wife), who will bring forth children unto himself through herself -- for she is a Tree of Life. She is Wisdom who is justified in her children:

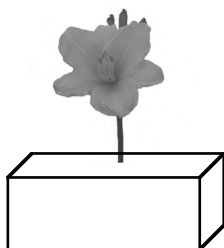
***HER WORDS;***

***HER FRUIT;***

***HER WORKS!***



***The One Light shines down on all --  
and looks up to none!***





## Chapter 21

### THE SCROLL

In a vision, I was taken up into a very high place and I looked and I saw a scroll. It appeared as though it was floating in a very slow, *descending* motion or direction. The scroll was made of some kind of leather-like material of a very high-quality, and it had the appearance of very fine linen. The color was white; not a bright white, but a very soft satin look.

The scroll contained writings that were very easy to read and understand. The inscriptions on it were written in calligraphy. I recognized it right away as being a legal document. I also recognized it to be the Title Deed to a plot of Land.

As I continued to look at the scroll, to my amazement I discovered that not only were the inscriptions on it the writings that documented a legal Title Deed to a plot of Land, but held within the inscriptions on the scroll were the identity of the owner of the plot of Land and also the *description* of the Land. The *descriptions* of the Land were also the *law* of the plot of Land! I watched in amazement, and as I was looking and reading I also took into account the awesome manner in which this title document contained so much information in such a small space. The size of it looked to be approximately twelve inches square.

As I continued to look upon this Title Deed, I was also aware that it had been rolled up the exact same distance from both the top and bottom, to meet in the middle. I did not see the document while it was still closed or rolled together, but was aware that it had been closed, and was now rolled (opened) from top to bottom for my viewing of it. The writings on it were to be read from left to right.

As I pondered these things which I beheld, another thing happened. I became aware that the Land was divided into four equal parts. One part was north, another south, another east, and the other west. At this time I became aware that each of the four parts was different in its individual value. Again to my amazement, I knew that the inscriptions containing the descriptions of the Land, the identity of its owner, and the law of this plot of Land also held within them the *value* of each of the four parts. The value of each part was not determined by its *own* position or quality, but its *value* was determined by the quality or value of the part that was joined to it on either side. I was not given to know what the value of any of the parts were, but without the parts that joined on either side, *each had no value of its own*. So the value of one part is found in the value of another part of the same plot of Land!

I understood that this legal document contained the law, description, and value of each individual unit of Light called Soul. I also understood that no single unit (Soul) had any value when separated from the whole. Neither does it have any description, purpose, or personal law that applies to it alone. Only as it (the Soul) identifies with the whole is it complete in purpose, description, and value. It can only know its own self worth (value) and have a clear, unmistakable True Identity when it identifies with the One Whole.

There is but *one whole* plot of Land! All who dwell in this Land are responsible for all other dwellers (citizens) of the same Land (Country). There is but *one* plot of Land and one legal Title Deed, and one law applies to all citizens equally. The identity of the owner is the One Whole.

In order to maintain the value of the *One*, each unit that occupies a space in the Land (Country) must be concerned about the well-being of the other units or dwellers of the Land -- even beyond its concern for its own well-being and prosperity. This is because the more value that one part assigns to another, *the greater will be the value of itself*.

Remember, when one part (Soul) believes itself to be separate from the other parts or of greater value, then it has no self worth, no complete purpose, and no full description. It is therefore called lawless, rebellious, selfish, and self-centered, and it has no certain citizenship -- and therefore no true Self Identity! When each part of this Land in all directions (north, south, east, and west) knows itself as the whole, and is *one with* all aspects of all citizens of this Land, then the value of all “parts” (which are really only the *One*) is greatly increased.

If you purchase a large plot of land, there may be some areas of very rugged terrain, while others are full of beautiful trees, flowers, and grass! Other areas may be mountainous or have running streams. Some parts will be “usable” and others not. If you were to assess the value of the whole, then all parts of it would be of equal value; but if you were to section it off into parts, then the more useable and beautiful parts will be assessed at a much higher value than the non-useable or less appealing parts.

This, of course, is how it is with a Soul. Some parts of the Soul (Body) seem more beautiful in appearance and are therefore more desirable than others, but the truth is that each part is but an individual expression of the *One Body*. *How* the One chooses to express Itself is not up to the expression, but it is the choice of the Expresser! Just as the clay cannot tell the potter how or what to make it, similarly no form or expression of the *One Light* can instruct the Light in Its choice of expression, form, or appearance.

The Light (God) only knows Itself as Itself and is not divided against Itself. The Light does not love or value Itself in one form, purpose, design, or location (direction) more or less than any other. One manifestation or operation of Itself is the same in all. *The light that is the Light, is the Light!*

*God is* -- and all things, whether expressing in form or without form (body), have their beingness in this self-same God (Light). They do not exist in another light, or separate from the other aspects

of the same Light or Self. The Light is like a seamless garment. It is not divided, though because of the many forms (bodies) it chooses to express Itself in, it appears to be so.

It is also like the skin (epidermis) on your physical body. You do not see stitching or division of skin where it covers one part of the body or the other. The bones and joints and other members are not seen as being divided, one limb or member from the other, because they are covered by the *one* skin covering.

The skin is the *largest* member or organ of the body. You must cut through or break the covering (skin) to get to any other part of the body. You cannot *see* the flesh or bones unless you somehow tear or penetrate the skin (covering). The Light (God) is the same. It covers the whole (all members of the plot of Land) and protects it from the damaging rays of the sun. The Light protects the borders of this Land, and no alien is allowed into this protected place. The Light is the guard at every entrance -- north, south, east, and west -- and always stands ready to defend this sacred plot of Land. The one Law (Light) is also the designer, architect, developer, and the builder of all buildings and *free-ways* in this Country (Land). It alone knows the terrain of this Land and exactly where the many streams are that eventually find their way to the rivers, giving drink to the thirsty along the way.

Many names have been assigned to this plot of Land and many titles and descriptions have been assigned to each unit or part of the whole. The Land is called Heaven, Paradise, New Jerusalem, the City of God, the Holy Land, the Temple of God, and the Sanctuary of the Most High God. The Land has also been called the Dwelling Place of Life, Light, Truth, Love, and Peace. These are but a few of the names that this plot of Land has been called.

No matter what name the Land may be identified by, the names do not change its true Identity! The true Identity of this plot of Land that is and was described in the inscriptions on the scroll is the *whole* of the *One Soul* and the many units (Souls) that make

up the full expression of the *One*. In order to *express* the allness of the One, there must be specific attention given to each individual unit or form of expression, in order for each Soul to *experience* the allness of the *One*.

All members of a great symphony must always be aware of and attuned to the whole, or else the symphony will give an uncertain sound. Being consciously aware and attuned to the other adjoining parts gives purpose and distinct sound to the whole (*the One*).

No one lives or dies to himself. We are all individual units of expression of the one *Light*. *We are all covered by one Light that looks down upon all -- and up to none!* If then we are all covered by the One that *is* all, then we live, move, and have our being in and under the Divine Law that covers all aspects of the Land. The Law of the Spirit of Life is applicable to all citizens of this Land equally.

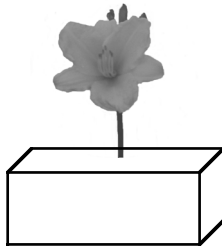
The scroll is and contains the design and description that assigns value and purpose to every Soul. The Law of Love identifies and gives citizenship and full protection of the Law to each citizen of this Country, which is the Holy Land! May you first identify with the *One*, and thereafter consciously and continuously identify with and love “your neighbor” (each unit Soul) as yourself, because it takes all to make up *the One*. It is by doing this that you will be able to *express* the allness of the One, and in doing so, *experience* the allness of that which *is* the One!

As the ocean is made up of every drop in it, but no one drop alone is the ocean, similarly the sun is *One*, and no individual unit or ray alone can call itself the Sun. Each ray is an individual *expression* of the one *Sun*, as is each drop of the ocean an individual expression of the ocean. Every Soul, then, is an individual expression of the *One Light*.

***THE ALL IS THE ONE.***

***A thought is the seed that holds within it the beginning  
and the end of the thing desired.***

***To be mindful of the Presence that is present, and to  
remain in this conscious state of mind, will facilitate the  
experience of true Self Realization.***



## Chapter 22

### **BEING MINDFUL OF THE PRESENCE**

*Being mindful of the Presence described herein and continuing in that state will facilitate the experience of true Self Realization.* Therefore be conscious of being Conscious. Keep your mind on being mindful. This requires training of the mind, determination, and patience.

Practice being conscious of the Spiritual Presence, and in so doing you will keep your mind constantly on the Source of Life. When you are continually aware of the Presence of Life, wherein is all knowledge, life, health, and wealth in the universes, you will come to know that *all* things are yours because you will come to realize that all things *are you*. Being ever mindful of the Holy Presence of Life will bring you to full Cosmic Illumination. Full, conscious Illumination provides full Understanding of Wisdom. One who possesses this Enlightened Mind owns a knowledge of all things that are in form or without form.

Anyone can know this to be true. Anyone who will accept the possibility of this being factual and true can certainly set about to prove it for himself or herself. To prove the truth of this is actually very simple, but it does require one to be honest and sincere, and determined and disciplined in his efforts.

This revelation of one's Self does not come to one who is passive, unconcerned, or whose attention is consumed with the outer trappings of everyday existence. Until one begins to look inward and is committed to discovering one's true Self, the discipline to do so will not be present. The length of time and difficulty in accomplishing this desired goal depends entirely on the decision

and passion of the seeker. One who starts this journey half-heartedly will find it to be a very long and arduous task. But one *whose mind is made up* can consider the journey complete and at its end, right at the moment the decision is made to begin! It is simply -- and I do mean *simply* -- a matter of accepting that which is already yours and in you!

There is nothing concerning you or your life that is not *already* resident within you. This is the reason that hundreds of millions of people who are following thousands of different religious doctrines can never know the Truth -- because their entire focus and discipline is on outer rituals and formalities and their dependence is on an outer guru or teacher.

This, like any other discovery, will be experienced *where it is. It is within you!* No one can do this for you and very few can even offer any meaningful teaching or formulas that are helpful in the process. This is true even for one who has truly made this Self-discovery, because what works for one in his efforts may not work for another. There are, however, *certain basic rules and formulas* that will assist in getting one started on the journey. These writings are an attempt to do just that!

After one has placed his feet solidly on this path of Spiritual Enlightenment, he or she rarely -- if ever -- needs counsel or outside help. Since the journey is an inward journey, then the road signs will *naturally* be established or posted on the *free-way* that one is traveling, which is also the *high-way* to freedom.

The beginning of knowingness and a conscious awareness of one's Isness is first experienced at the Moment of Decision. There can never be a desire and therefore a decision made to consciously and honestly begin the inner search for Self unless one's awakening process has evolved to an awareness of the possibility of achieving the desired goal. The presence of this awareness and the awareness of the Presence are not only the Source of the things desired, *but are in fact the thing that is desired.*



One cannot separate the desire for a thing from the thing desired because the same invisible Substance that is the Source of the desire is also the one and self-same invisible Substance wherein the thing desired is held. The pattern and form of the thing desired is held within the thought or seed. The manifestation or precipitation of the thing desired depends entirely upon the intensity of the desire for it.

Within a seed are held the kind of tree, its form, its nature, and purpose. The desire for a thing gives life to the seed from which the thing desired will *manifest*, whether it is a tangible or intangible thing that is *desired*. A thought is the seed that holds within it the beginning and the end of the thing desired. There will never be a real, solid commitment; a pure, made-up-mind; or a definite, solid, unshakable, and unmovable decision or conclusion until or unless the desire for the thing is intense enough to keep the picture of its fulfillment ever in your sight. This is extremely important to know -- that unless there is a *made-up-mind* to achieve the thing desired, full, Cosmic Conscious Illumination will not be experienced.

It is also important to *know* that once the decision (the made-up-mind state) has been reached, the process is quite natural. It requires only that one remain conscious of the thing desired in order to keep the desire to possess it intense enough to fuel the fire necessary for the process. There is nothing else one needs *do* to *make it happen*. It happens *naturally* once this one decision is made, because every other decision concerning you and your life that is associated with achieving the thing desired will automatically support the one decision you have made. Once this seed (thought or idea) is conceived in your conscious mind, then the desire will be intense enough to cause you to take any necessary action in order to finish the journey to full Cosmic Enlightenment.

Just as a child is conceived in the womb by a natural process, the process of the child's formation from the design within the sperm and egg of its kind is also a natural process. The mother does not

need to constantly tell the thing that is conceived within her what species she wants to birth. No, its kind and species were determined at the time of conception, not at some time during its gestation or time of formation. *It is only a matter of time*, and in the fullness of time -- literally -- the thing conceived *will* manifest. The true, honest heart that is burning with desire will continue the process because the individual knows that the desired thing shall *be manifested* outwardly -- because it *is*, already, manifested inwardly! Just as the baby not yet born outwardly surely has manifested inwardly, no one who is with child could ever deny or doubt this! Therefore we should never judge anything by its outer appearance. So why would we doubt this to be true concerning the *invisible Soul or Light Body* that is being formed within us? The principle is the very same.

There is nothing in the universe that is not made of *Light*. This Universal Light is called by many names. Its most popular name is *God*. This Presence that is called God and Light is also called Spirit and Life. It is called “energy” or the magnetic field by the scientific world. Few, however, understand that *all of these names are appropriate*.

Another name that is rarely used to identify God is *Consciousness*. Light and Consciousness most accurately describe the invisible Substance from which all created things -- visible or invisible -- have come. Not only is this invisible Life Substance the Source out of which all things have come, but all things that are visible and are expressing in a form of some kind literally do *remain in* this Presence.

I can certainly see why anyone could call God by any one or all of these names, depending on who you ask. Another name that God is called is *Good*. These two names -- God and Good -- are synonymous.

The truth is that everything is Good. Anyone who is sufficiently Spiritually Enlightened understands that there can only be Good everywhere present. If Good is not everywhere, always present,

then how could one always be capable of doing a *good work*? Surely evil cannot be somehow enfolded within God or Good!

So then, where is the evil that is given so much attention and credence? An apple cannot be both pure, clean, and whole -- and rotten at the same time! No! If there were some way to actually mix Good and evil, then all *Good-God* would be contaminated by the evil, and this could never, ever produce pure Light and Life. When one considers the unrealistic idea of there existing *both* Good and evil everywhere together, then the belief in duality flees away!

While in the midst of delivering their message to their congregation, it is not unusual to hear preachers from different denominations simply *stop -- and address the devil* -- as though the devil had just interrupted them by speaking to them. A belief in the devil's ability to interrupt and actually challenge one who professes to be *God's mouthpiece* gives credence to an omnipresent and all powerful devil! This of course would make the so-called devil equal with God! Certainly this is not possible.

There is *one* Eternal Presence, existing *as* Existence and *in* Existence, and this Presence is Consciousness. This Consciousness is invisible in its formless state. Held within *all* Consciousness, everywhere present, is all Life. This Life is Spirit and Energy. There is no place in the Universes that this invisible Substance is not present, nor could there be such a place. In order for there to *be a place*, this Light, Life, Spirit, and Energy (which is Consciousness) would have to precede the place's existence, for by the very nature of existence, no thing and therefore no place exists without Existence. The whole of Existence is held within this Light, Invisible, Creative Substance! This is difficult to comprehend for the not-yet-awakened conscious mind, but really this truth is quite simple to the adept or mystic.

One who is ready to accept this absolute Universal Law need not *do* anything to understand it, as far as rituals or religious belief systems are concerned. One only needs to *be still and know*. Your full,

*Conscious Awareness* of your Beingness, which is this Presence, will give evidence (confirmation) to your innermost being that this, and only this could be true, and therefore have any eternal Reality!

Pain in the body of one person has no reality in the person next to him. So how then can the pain really have *true reality* to anyone except the *one* to which it is real? Similarly, the broken heart has no reality to the one whose heart is filled with love, peace and joy. So how then can a broken heart have any True Reality? It cannot because it does not! Of course, it is very real to the one experiencing it, but the instant the pain or broken heart is gone or healed, its reality is gone with it. It is like the image that appears in the mirror when one stands before it. The moment the person whose image is *in* the mirror is gone, so is the image. This is because the image in the mirror was only a reflection and had no reality of its own. Likewise, when one will focus his attention on the things that have True Reality, the image of evil in the mirror will flee away. *Truly, where your attention goes, your energy flows.*

That which has True Reality is eternal. One should only focus his attention on and only believe in the things that he has proven for himself to have True Reality. Any thing that has True Reality will always have True Reality for everyone, all the time. The thing that has True Reality is true and real and never changes! It never passes away. It never gets better or worse. The face in the mirror will always pass away, but the face that remains will never pass away.

Practicing being consciously aware of this ever-present *Presence* will always first bring to you peace, and afterwards health, prosperity, happiness, joy, and all *good* things pertaining to Life. These things are yours simply by the receiving of them!

You are what you know and you can know what shall *be*, but only if you know that that which shall be, *already is*, because of the Presence that is Now Present! This Presence that is Now Present holds within Itself the thing which *was* and *is* and *shall be*. There is no thing in the future that is not *now present*. There is no past that is not *now* present.

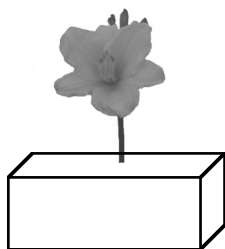
In this state of consciousness, *there is no time or space -- there is only Beingness and Isness*. The sum total of who and what you are now, *in the present*, is the fruit of who and what you have been in the past. This *now-present* fruit also holds within it the seed of *all that you shall ever be* throughout all of the ages to come. This is just like an acorn from a certain species of oak tree that someone may find in the forest. It now holds within its DNA all generations of the past of its *kind*. It also holds in its *now-present* DNA all generations of the future.

The *I* of one's Self *is*, therefore it *is now*. The *I* that *is now* expressing in its present form has *always been* and it shall *always be*. The present form however, like all other forms, will change as it already has myriads of times before. The Presence that is Energy, Light, Consciousness, and Life, that is now expressing in all forms, has always expressed in whatever forms the Master of the Presence chooses to give it. The Essence which holds the many different kinds, shapes, and sizes of forms together never changes -- only the forms change!

This Life Energy (which is Light) has expressed and will continue to express and experience Itself in every level of conscious being in Existence, even in the level of consciousness of a grain of sand. You see, this Substance that we are naming "Light" is the very essence of everything in existence. It is, in fact, Existence Itself. No thing has ever or could ever have a Beingness apart from this Light. The Light is that which gives Beingness to *all* things that *be*.

Since this *One* is *all* and *all* is the *One*, then there is only *One*. When one unit or form of expression injures or harms another, it is in fact inflicting pain and harm on itself. This is why we should always keep the *golden rule: Do unto others as you would have them do unto you; and love your neighbor as yourself*.

***Oh Man, know Thyself!***



## Chapter 23

### **WHEN WILL YOU BE WHO YOU ARE?**

Until Soul (or Man) is actually, consciously aware of itself and knows itself as it really is, it will continue to believe itself to be something that it is not. We can assign most of the credit for the Soul's lost Identity to many who society and the world at large have looked upon as great philosophers and religious leaders. Theologians and various doctrines have, for the most part, served to add to what was already unnatural and depraved Soul behavior, causing more and more confusion and thereby creating mass hatred, murderous hearts, and vile behavior by one Soul toward another. This mind was given birth by the various religious beliefs. This is the reason the mind must be renewed or changed.

Until the moral Law of commandments was given, Soul did not experience hatred and had no need or thought to deceive or harm another Soul. All Souls lived in peace, doing their own thing but straying far from their true Divine (immortal) nature. In fact, they descended so far into their own creation of form that they came to believe themselves to be the thing created instead of the Creator. Most Souls remain in this state of mind today.

Because of Soul's lost Identity, the Great Spirit Light (God) gave what was intended to be a way out of the depraved state into which Soul had descended. This was done by establishing a system of Law that would assist some in their ascent out of their now-hopeless state of ignorance. In doing so, Soul will once again regain conscious awareness of its true Self Identity.

This Law was intended to help all Souls find their way to the Light. But because of its now-depraved nature, the unenlightened state that it created for itself, and one unenlightened Soul teaching

or interpreting the Law for another, the thing that was intended for good served only as a source of more confusion, contention, and hatred.

The Great Light -- which is called by many names, one of which is God -- is the overseer of all Souls as they descend into a lower vibratory realm or frequency. In this lower frequency of existence It creates for Itself many types of dwelling places, one of which is called a body, or temple of God. This body of creation is also called Man! While there are other forms too numerous to name that have also been created by the Creator (Light / God), we will only speak of the creation of Soul called Man in this treatise.

How could the True Self scheme and consciously desire to harm or injure another “member” of Itself? This would be like using one hand to chop off the other. Not only would this behavior say to the one hand, “I have no need for you, so I will get rid of you,” but the same would apply for the hand to say, “I only need one foot so I will chop off the other!”

Now this sounds a bit ridiculous -- and it is ridiculous -- however this is exactly what one Soul says and does to another Soul when it hates or harms another. In reality, it is *not another*, but the *same Self* expressing *as* another! *Everything* that has a beingness in form does so by and through *Light -- the One Light!* So every size or kind of expression (whether in form or whether it is expressing without form) is *the One Thing* that is doing *all* of the expressing. While You (Soul) are an individual expression of this One Great Light, Soul (Man) is but the Light expressing Itself *as Soul!* Regardless of how the Light chooses to express Itself, it is still Itself expressing Itself.

Imagine holding in your hand an avocado *seed*. The *only* way for this seed to express itself *in another form* is for someone to plant it, and by doing so the planter of the seed has become a co-worker with the seed. Now working together with the seed (the seed has no ability to plant itself), the sower of the seed has given the *seed*



opportunity to express itself in *another form*! Just because the seed is now expressing itself in the form of a tree does not in any way diminish the thing (seed) that is doing the expressing. The seed that is now expressing as a tree is able to do so by bringing out of the innermost parts of itself the thing that it was originally designed to express. The seed is not only the *One* expressing as a tree, but it is in fact the very thing that it is itself expressing. How can you separate the expression of a thing from that which is doing the expressing? *You cannot!*

Soul is but an expression of Light that is also called Spirit and God! Again, can you separate the expression of a thing from the Source of that which is expressed? The answer is: absolutely *not!* They are *one!* Soul is but a name given to the Light that is the Source of the expression as Soul. Light / Soul then creates yet another form of expression and calls it a “body.” Is the body that Soul is expressing *through and in* any less Light than the Light that is expressing as Soul? No, it is *not!* So the one thing that is expressing Itself in so many and various shapes and forms is the *one Self*-- the *same Self*. It is the Source of all expressions and is also the thing that is being expressed!

Light is God and God is Light. Light vibrates at different frequency levels and takes *form* in whatever kind or shape that pleases Itself! It gives Itself whatever name It chooses. Enfolded within this Light is all Life and Consciousness. This great, eternal, everlasting Light is the Source of all Knowledge, Wisdom, and Understanding. With and within this One Light (God) *all* things that exist have their existence and beingness. There is no place for any thing to have a being outside of this Life Source of being, because this Light -- wherein is all Life -- is the beingness of *all!* Nothing could exist without Existence! Existence does exist, but only as the Light that is its Source, expresses Itself *as* Existence! This goes for every thing else that exists in Existence.

Again, we see that the Thing that *is* and depends on nothing (by any other name) for its isness and beingness is the Source of all --

and *is all!* The Great Spirit / Light / God looks down on all and looks up to *no one!* It is the Source of Itself and is the Self of its Source. *It is the One.*

In the writings of the Holy Scriptures, the following truths were penned by great, enlightened Souls of past ages. We read that Man (Soul) is told that he *is* a Light set upon a hill. We also read these instructions: “Look unto the hills, from whence cometh your help; your help is in the Lord.” When we understand that the Lord is the Spirit and the Spirit is the Light that you are, then we understand that the Source of your help is, in fact, Yourself!

The Scriptures also declare that “God is Light.” If the Scriptures ascribe the name *Light* to Soul and ascribe the same name (identity) to God, then how could one not see that these two are in fact *not* two, but *One?!*

Did not the Master Teacher called Jesus say, “I am *One* with God”? Did not he say, “The I (eye) is the Light of the body”? Did he not also declare, “I am -- the Light of the world”? Yes, he said all of this, and much more! The apostle Paul, who is also a Great, Enlightened Soul, said to Man (Soul), “Ye are Christ and Christ is God”! Paul also wrote that “Christ is the Light”! So then, how many Lights are there? I tell you of a certainty there is *One Light*. This Light is God!

The very title or name “God” is very confusing because of the awesome reverence ascribed to it. Since the true meaning of the word “God” is Good, why is it that mankind does not ascribe the same awesome reverence to the name Good as he does to God? Or why not give this awesome reverence to Peace, Love, or Joy -- or to the words Consciousness, Life, or Spirit? All of these titles are given to the *One God* that is, in truth, the *One Light*. The Light that *is*, is expressing Itself as God and Good.

The Master Jesus is quoted as saying to some of those who were deriding him, “You worship you know not what.” I will here and

now make this same observation and declaration. Most people who “worship” or acknowledge a “Higher Power” have no concept of what it is they are professing to worship. There are a myriad of different images, descriptions, names, and titles that are assigned to whatever the worshiper has come to know as his source of help or Deity. But the truth is that regardless of the name or title ascribed, and regardless of what one’s image of Deity (God) is, it does not change the fact that *there is only one Source of true and real help for Soul. This help is the Light -- the One!*

One of the myriad of ways the Light expresses Itself is as a Soul called Man. The Light is the only Source of Itself and It is the only Source of Soul (Man). Therefore Soul may only look to the True Light for any true help.

The question is then asked, “*When will you be Who you are?*”

The answer is simple! If you are conscious and are sure that you *be*, then the only time for *you to be* is *now*, would it not? How can *you* have a being some other time, and not *be now*?

Can you *be now* -- the Self that *is*, Itself -- and at some point in the future *be* another Self? If so, then you would have to conclude that the Real Self, Itself is *not now being*, wouldn’t you? Then *who are you?* If the Self Itself is *not now*, then how can the Self Itself *be* at all -- since *now* is the *only time* that *is*?

The only time that the Self Itself can have a beingness is now. So then if you are *not* the Self Itself now being, what Self will *be* in the future and *who* will the future Self *be*? Furthermore, who is the Self Itself that is being now? It cannot possibly be *you* if *you* are not the Self that is Itself now being!

The Self Itself is the Self that *is* you; and the you that *is*, *is* the Self that *was* and the Self that *shall be*! Otherwise, there could not be a Self now being!

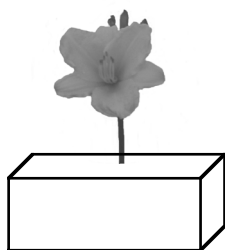
To the Soul that has not yet come to know who the Self Itself is,  
I would encourage you, "*Oh Man, know Thyself!*"

You have always been Who you are! You had no beginning, nor  
will you ever have an end! You are Light! Light *is!* Light has no  
mother or father! Light had no beginning! All beginnings and  
endings have their beginnings and endings in the Light *that is --*  
*the One.*

You *are*, and you *are Light*. You be -- and you *be now -- the One!*



*I can only conceive of a thing of like kind.*



## Chapter 24

### **ME, MY, AND I** **EMBODY ALL I DESIRE**

I am the thing I desire.

I desire only the thing that *I am* and already have. I *cannot* desire or conceive of a thing that I am *not*. I cannot conceive of that which is not *in* me!

I am Light. I can only conceive a thing of like kind. All things that I desire are held within the Light that I am.

I am the Hearer and I am that which is heard. I am the Seer and the thing that I see. I am the Knower and the thing that is known; or you could say: that which I know -- I am.

I cannot *know* that which I am not. The moment I know it, I am it, because I have joined or become one with it. I cannot separate the thing that I know from that which is known. That which is -- I am -- and I am all that is. I cannot know, and therefore be, that which *is not*.

God said, "Light, be," and therefore *all* is Light. All things that take form are but the Light that I am. The Light that is, in whatever form the *I* or Light may take, is the Self of that which *be*, and *is Light*. Light is, because Light be.

If you take a tree and build a house with the wood that the tree *is* -- the house *is* the tree in another form, but it *is* the tree! So it is also with Light, regardless of whatever form It may take.

The *I am* of the beingness of Light is the self-appointed Self of Itself. In Itself It lives and has Its beingness. The Self expression *is* Itself in the expression which is within Itself.

The thing that is of Me is in Me. The thing that is in Me is of Me and cannot be of another, because I am the only Source of the thing that is *in* Me.

When I was pregnant with my son, we were one body, expressing as one self -- because he was *in* me. No one else was pregnant with my son except me. None other felt and knew his movement within me. I *alone* experienced the day-to-day expansion (stretching) of my body to make room for the growing child. I did nothing to *make* my body expand; instead, the movement of Life created the expansion of my body as the living thing within me was in a state of growth and expansion. I was and am therefore *one with* the thing (my son) that I conceived, and am *one in it!* There will never be a place that my son can go to that I will not be with him, because *my Life essence is in him and with him.*

A seed is pregnant with the tree and all that the tree will ever be or produce. As the seed is pregnant with the tree, the tree is also pregnant with its fruit. Likewise, the fruit is pregnant with itself by its seed within itself.

That which *is*, is the Beingness *of* that which is. I cannot be that which I am not. I cannot *not* be that which I am. I am Light, and Light is all and *in all* -- and therefore all things that be are in Me, and of Me. All things are in Me and *I am* in all things, because I am Light. Light is the only source of existence, and all that exists has its being and existence in that which exists.

All that is, is *in* that which is and exists and is existing. So if I exist, I be. And if I be, I have my being in Existence. Existence does exist! Light exists! Existence exists because *Light is its existence.*

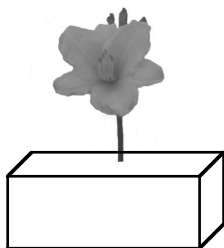


Existence is *not* the beingness of Light. Light *is* the beingness of Existence and therefore is that which exists. *Light be -- even without Existence.*

The thing conceived is *of that* from which it was conceived. It is *both* the conceived and the conceiver. The same spark of Life that lighted the egg also lighted the sperm. Therefore the egg and the sperm share the one atom (Adam) source of Life equally, and so are equally *one Life* in the Light.

***Peace, Love, and Joy, when all mixed together in equal parts,  
produce out of themselves the climate that is the  
Presence of the One Light!***

***THIS IS HEAVEN!***



## Chapter 25

### **HEAVEN: WHAT AND WHERE IS IT?**

In a vision, I was privileged to look into the realm that is called by some, *heaven*. This “place” is not identified by a geographical position or any certain direction, but rather *heaven* is *heaven* because of its *climate*. The term *climate* used here is not defined as the weather, or any particular season; rather, the term *climate* is actually what makes heaven *heaven*!

During my vision experience, I also noted the climate as it relates to weather, but as I have already said, this is not the *climate* that actually makes *heaven*, *heaven*. The sun was shining brightly and the temperature was just perfect. A soft breeze was blowing just enough to cause a fresh, cool feeling upon my face. The breeze was strong enough to cause the branches on the trees nearby to make a statement as the leaves all fluttered around.

The smell in the air was fresh, clean, pure, and alive. There was also a soft, gentle aroma in the air. It was a mixture of all manner of delicious odors that made the one aroma awesome! As I breathed *in* this aroma, it was as though my nostrils *became* the aroma. I had a realization of true beingness during this heavenly experience.

Under the canopy of a deep, rich, blue-colored sky, there was much activity. Life was expressing everywhere and in every way imaginable. There was a very long table, perhaps 50 feet long, sitting out in this very large open space. It was decked with all manner of exquisite food, ready to be consumed.

I cannot tell you the “name” of any one food on the table, but I can tell you that my taste buds seemed to be extremely acute and

alive, as never before. Never had I tasted food so excellent in quality and taste! It was awesome, to say the least.

There were perhaps one hundred people present, and all of them, both male and female, were full of joy and laughter. Everyone was eating, dancing, and talking to each other; the expressions on each face told the whole story.

The women who were present wore long, full, gathered skirts and other types of garments made of a very soft, thin, silk-like material. The men wore casual or informal clothing made of the same material. The breeze caused both the men's and women's clothing to sway. The breeze gave a beautiful *presence* to the garments that would not have been noticed except for this soft, cool breeze that was everywhere. A presence of exhilarating Life went throughout my whole being as this *cool, gentle breeze* touched my face and being.

During my visit to heaven I also heard sounds of music like I had never heard before. It was as though the very air that I was breathing was the Source of the music. It was as though ten thousands of thousands of members of a great symphony played. The sound was awesome and their harmony was perfectly executed. Their rhythm was in perfect unison. The sounds were as one, but at the same time, I was acutely aware of each instrument having or giving its own sound.

I saw no instrument, nor did I see any musician playing any instrument. I *saw* no source for the sounds of harps, stringed instruments, violins, or any other of the many and various sounds, but I *felt* as though the Source was the soft, cool breeze.

As all who were present were actively engaged in all of the festivities (eating, drinking, talking, laughing, dancing and socializing with each other), I began walking with two other people toward a nearby river. I do not remember their names. We found ourselves walking down a slight (very small) decline; you could

not call it a hill, for the decline was barely noticeable. As we walked, I became aware that the luscious green grass and beautiful flowers all around were pulsating with a form of Life that I had never experienced before. I say I had never *experienced* before because that was what was happening -- *I was experiencing it*. Rather than simply *looking at* the beauty all around, teeming with a Light and quality of Life such as I had never known, I was very consciously aware that while I did see or look at it, I was *also* very much *experiencing* it. It was as though the very grass and flowers themselves were actually inside of me, expressing this awesome Life Essence and beauty. I was consciously aware that there was not one blade of grass, one flower, or one leaf on any tree that was not alive and expressing this awesome *Life Presence*.

The colors of everything were breathtaking. The flowers were an array of colors. Some were like a rainbow, and there were shades, tones and colors mixed together that I had never seen before. The colors, like everything else, were alive and *pulsating*, and mixed in with the flowers' aroma. All of it seemed to be enfolded within the *soft, cool breeze*.

We only walked perhaps two or three hundred feet until we came to a river. While standing on the bank of the river at the water's edge I was exceedingly alive and aware of everything around me. I looked back behind me and noticed the continued activities of those who were still at the place where I had been near and around the very long table with all of the excellent food. They were all still very much engaged in dancing, laughing, and all of the other festivities. They did not seem to be aware that we had walked down to the river.

As I stood on the bank near the water's edge, *I was very aware of the water in the river*. It was like glass and it was *crystal clear!* There was not so much as the smallest of any kind of debris in it. As I stood, staring at the beauty of this magnificent body of flowing water, it appeared to be communicating with me. The bottom of the river was covered with a very rich, excellent, soft,

white sand. Of course, I did not touch the sand because it was on the bottom of the river, but I knew it was very fine sand and alive.

I also observed the depth of the waters. They *appeared* to be shallow enough that I could wade across. I am five feet tall, but I *knew* that it was much deeper than it appeared to be. This, however, had nothing to do with my decision not to cross it.

While standing there, I looked across the river and noticed a few people, perhaps four or five, standing on the other side. During my entire visit to heaven I saw no one who was a stranger to me. I knew everyone as though they were all my family members. I considered going across the river (for what, I do not know), but I did not go across. There was no boat that I saw, nor did I see any other means by which to cross the river, but this too was not an issue.

I was aware of many very large and very tall trees on the other side of the river, just behind the people that were standing there. The luscious green grass and flowers were swaying there in the magnificent, *soft, cool breeze* in the same manner as they were on my side of the river. I do not know what kind of trees they were, but they were all perfectly formed, full, and pulsating with the vibrant Life Force that was in everything else all around me.

There was not one blade of grass, leaf, tree limb, or any thing anywhere that was not simply teeming with this awesome Life Force. Everything -- including the beautiful, soft, white sand on the bottom of the river -- all seemed to be flowing through me, singing, laughing, and speaking. Every part of every thing was joyous beyond words. This indescribable *Life Presence* filled literally everything, including all of my entire being. Even though I was *observing* everything and everyone very intently, it was as though everything *was* everything, including every one and myself! Nothing seemed to be separate from the *All*, though there was the *appearance* of each thing being an individual thing or person. Words fail me to remotely describe or articulate this awesome experience, and to attempt to do so does violence to it.

At the beginning of this chapter, the question was asked: “Heaven: what and where is it? Near the end of my vision or my visit to heaven, I realized that *none* of the *things* that I had visually observed made this “place” I found myself at or in, *heaven* -- though I was very much cognizant of it *being heaven*. I realized that the awesome beauty that my eyes beheld and the touch of the soft, cool breeze felt by my body and every single cell of my entire being were not what made this place *heaven*. I was also aware that the sound of the many thousands of harps, violins, and all manner of other instruments (many of which I could not even name, though each gave a distinct sound of its own) -- this sound, too, did not make this place *heaven*. And the exquisite food, my greatly enhanced taste buds, and the clean, fresh aroma of Life in my nostrils were not what made this place *heaven*.

I realized that this *place* called *heaven* could be anywhere and everywhere present with me, because it was, in fact, the *whole of my own beingness!* But even this was not what actually makes heaven, *heaven*.

There were three ingredients that made this “place” *heaven*. It was somewhat like baking a cake and mixing three *equal* parts together to create the whole cake. If you were to take the entire universe as your mixing bowl, and as equal parts pour in *all* the ***Peace***, *all* the ***Love***, and *all* the ***Joy***, completely filling the bowl, and then stir it all up and pour it out, this would give you the *climate* that would produce all of the experiences and beauty that I have attempted to articulate. This truly is *heaven!*

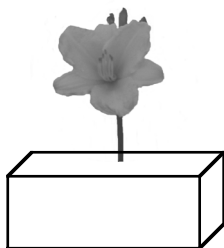
Everything that I saw, felt, heard, tasted or smelled were but the *effects* of this awesome *climate* (cake, or heaven); the climate was the *cause* of it *all*. *Peace, Love, and Joy* are Divine attributes of the nature of the Source of all Life. When all mixed together, Peace, Love, and Joy produce -- out of Themselves -- the *climate* that is the *Presence* of the *One Light!*

*This is what and where heaven truly is!*

***If your religious doctrine does not work when practiced,  
then it follows that it is also not good in theory.***

***Know those who rule over you!***

***You must be born again. Being born again must be  
experienced as a reality, not just simply as a concept!***





## Chapter 26

### **A WORD TO THE WISE ABOUT BEING** **“SAVED”**

There are millions today who are well-versed in the Bible. Most of them are *sure* they know the real truth about God and they truly believe they are “saved.” They believe they are saved because the death of Jesus, their “savior,” washed away their sins. In the past, many were involved in all manner of what they *now* term to be *wrong behaviors*. These behaviors included alcoholism, drug additions, improper sexual behaviors, thievery, lawlessness, murders, lying, and whatever other types of behaviors and habits they consider to be “wrong.”

Because of their education in the Scriptures and because they are now no longer involved in their past lifestyles, they believe they are now *saved*. They believe this because they go to church; they read, quote, and even teach the Scriptures; and they no longer indulge in the things in which they once participated.

Millions of these so-called Bible believers are also of the mind that they are *now* seen by God as a *Son of God*. They preach that they have *now* entered into “the Kingdom of God” and there is nothing more for them to do while in this earth realm. They preach this because many have been falsely taught that a man named Jesus *did it all for them*. This totally false doctrine deceives, discourages, and destroys all who follow it! Not only does it deceive its followers, but because they believe in this *false doctrine* they do nothing in order to find and know the *True Doctrine of Christ*!

First of all, they are *not* “saved.” I would ask those who profess this, “*What exactly are you saved from?*” They might answer, “Saved from eternal *hell*!” Then I would ask, “What exactly is

*hell?*” Here is the answer: Hell is a dry, desert place of darkness where there is *no Light, no Truth, and no Life*. Jonah said that he was in *hell* when he was in the belly of the whale! Hell is a state of consciousness void of Truth, Hope, Light, and Life! As long as a person remains in this state of consciousness, he is bound in chains of ignorance and *hell* is his portion in life. There is no peace nor rest for the Soul in this state of mind!

Anyone who is a Bible student knows that the Bible tells us in I Peter 1:9 that to receive the “end of your faith *is the salvation of your Soul*.” Tell me, how it is that one can receive the end of a *seed* except it fall into the ground and die, come forth as a tree, and bear *fruit*? *The fruit is the end of the seed* which bore the tree.

The Scriptures say that we are given a measure (or seed) of Faith at the beginning of our life in the Faith walk. The Scriptures also tell us to grow and increase in the Knowledge of Truth (Faith) “until we come into the fullness of the Knowledge of the Son of God to a perfect man.” The *perfect* man spoken of here is one who has *perfect understanding* (full and complete understanding) of the *perfect* Law of Life.

Jesus said, “if you walk in the Light (Christ Mind), as I am in the Light, in you will be no darkness (death) at all.” The death he speaks of here is in reference to the death of the word (the seed) when it is sown in our flesh minds. Afterwards, *if* the seed and the ground are properly cared for, the seed is quickened and given new Life and it is then a Living Soul in the form of a seed.

It is in this same manner that we receive Spiritual Enlightenment. We first receive the word of Truth in our natural mind, but it does not remain there *in the seed state*. The word or seed is born again when it is given new Life by the Spirit of God. Your desire (passion) for Truth will ignite or give new Life to the planted seed. In this manner, the Christ in you (which is the Light wherein is Life), grows and increases.

Since the *salvation of your Soul* is experienced at the *end* of your Faith (at the harvest of your spiritual works), please tell me how one can gather *fruit* from a tree that does not exist, and how one can possess a tree from a seed that has not been planted, quickened, and resurrected! It is by the planting (burial) and resurrection that the seed (word) is born-again. As it grows it takes on the form of a tree -- a new form!

The seed (word) *is* appointed *once* to die! But as the Scripture says, “*it does not surely die.*” A seed *can* only die once and be born again. After the tree comes forth out of the now *once-dead-seed* and brings forth fruit out of herself, her fruit is the *judge*.

The harvesting of your spiritual fruit is judgment day! This is the “trying of your Faith.” You judge a *tree* not by the seed it came out of, but by the fruit it bears. Every man’s works (fruit) will be tried by the fire of the Holy Ghost as to what kind they are: wood, hay, and stubble; or precious stones, silver, and gold. All works (fruit) that are not of God (Spirit and Truth) will be consumed by the brightness of the Light of Truth. Our God (Spirit-Light) is a consuming fire!

By the *words* of *your* mouth you will be justified or condemned. Your words are the *only* judge you will ever face. Wisdom (who is the Tree of Truth and Life) is justified in her children (works, or fruit). When your works / words are tried and they survive the test, *this is the salvation of your Soul*. An individual will suffer or experience loss *only* if his words are of tares, wood, hay, or stubble; or are carnal, fleshly, and earthly works. These kind of works will be burned or dissolved when the Light of Truth exposes them for what they are. This is how the “coming of the Lord” -- the literal manifestation of Truth by Spiritual Revelation -- destroys the “work of the devil.” The appearance of Light dissolves or consumes the darkness.

It is the increase of Light in your consciousness (which is the manifestation of Christ, or Wisdom and Understanding) that produces a decrease in darkness, error, and deception! *Man* must decrease and *God* must increase! This is how the Soul is saved!

The Soul is saved by gathering together the tares (the lies -- the doctrines and error of man's religions) and exposing them for what they are. It is saved by the uncovering of every evil work, which is simply corrupt fruit, or the works of the flesh -- the mind of man. This is "the bondwoman and her son"! These are the works (the message of error) brought forth out of the wisdom of man and her fruit (which is her son that must be destroyed or cast out, as is written in Galatians 4:30).

By exposure to Light and Truth error is revealed. It is in this way that one will know the spirit of error (the wisdom of man) and the Spirit of Truth (the Wisdom of God). When the fire of the Light of the Spirit of God and Truth is manifested, the only fruit, works, or things that remain are the True Words of Eternal Life. *This is the Salvation of your Soul!*

An apple tree could say that the seed that it was born out of "gave its life that the tree could have life." Even the fruit of a tree could say the same thing. Had the seed not given its life (in the seed form), there could be no tree, and therefore there could be no fruit, wherein are the seed for the next generation. In this way the life of the first seed is able to continue because it "does not surely die!"

For a man to say that another man's death -- such as described in the doctrine of the death of Jesus -- would result in life to himself is ludicrous. Every seed must die for *itself* (but "not surely die") if it will ever become a tree or be changed into another form. This is the manner in which *every Soul* goes through the metamorphic transformation. Every Soul must put off (or transform) its earthly form (the seed or flesh form) in order to put on the heavenly form. This death is not a death of the human, flesh body that we live in, but rather a death to the *thoughts* (seeds) of man that operate in the fleshly-thinking mind! The carnal, fleshly, earthly mind of man is the "devil's" workshop. Likewise, the Christ Mind is the workshop of Deity -- God! *The resurrected, Living Christ Seed is the salvation of the Soul!*

Given this truth about how the Soul is “saved,” how then could a person be saved by mumbling or repeating some form of a so-called prayer given to him by some preacher? Salvation means *to escape*, to be saved *from* -- not *in* or *after* -- death, hell, and the grave! Am I to expect to be “saved” *from* death *after* I die?! How could this possibly be?

The Soul, like any other seed or like the caterpillar when experiencing its transformation from one form to another, *does not die!* That is, it does not *die* as most understand the word to mean. If it were to really *die* as is the earthly understanding of the word, then how could there come out of it *new Life*? Here is how: *the Life is not new, but the form in which the Life is expressing in and through is new!*

In the book of James it says that the tongue is *as* a flame of fire, and that it sets on *fire* the course of nature. What this means is that in the power (knowledge) of the tongue is *death and Life!* Where there is *no Life* there is *only* death; there is only destruction in the tongue of an individual in this state. The words of the individual’s own mouth are the person’s fruit, and *the end of a corrupt seed is death!* The *end* of a Living, incorrupt seed is eternal Life, of which *there is no end.*

When the Lord (Spirit) has come to His temple (your words), then every word you speak shall come to pass because they are alive forever and they shall never pass away! Your words shall live forever and in this way *you receive eternal Life.* Participating in religion, quoting Bible verses, going to church, and playing the “church” role will *not* save you!

Tell me, do you have a burial policy? Do you anticipate that “someday” you will “die”? Do you profess that you are *saved*? What then are you saved from -- since the salvation of your Soul is to be *saved* from *death*? You cannot have it both ways. If Jesus died *for you*, then why do you look for the grim reaper? ***No one died for you!***

Man is a Soul and a Soul is a seed. This Soul-seed is the *word of Truth* (or the *seed of God*)! The death that every *man* is appointed to experience is the death of the seed of Truth when it is planted in his consciousness. A seed must fall into the ground and die (experience itself in a new form), or it abides alone. The mind is the earth garden, and when the word of Truth is planted in it, the Christ (the Tree of Life) is born (or formed) within you after the seed is quickened (germinated). *It is impossible for another -- anyone -- to do this or experience this for someone else.* Could someone else be begotten, formed, and born out of your mother's womb and it somehow *be you or benefit you*? This is how ridiculous religious doctrines are that teach the absurdity that Jesus or anyone else can die to save your Soul. The seed (Soul) *that you are* is the seed / Soul that *must* be quickened and experience a metamorphic change in kind, form, and purpose! No one can *die* for you and likewise, no one can *live* for you!

There is only one way to be "saved" from the wheel of death, hell, and the grave. This way is to begin *and continue in* the word of Truth, looking *always* to the Spirit of God within for counsel, direction, and correction in every aspect of your life. When Christ is fully formed in you and you are made in the likeness of God, then you are filled with the fullness of Truth and Light and for you *death* has been conquered! Try, search, and hope (if you must) to find *another* way, but at its end it will only continue to produce again and again the same result -- *death*!

We have this promise that *after* (not when, but *after*) the *Spirit of Truth has come*, he will lead us into *all* Truth. This is written another way in Malachi 3:1, where it says, "The Lord shall *come to his temple*." The Spirit of Truth will reveal to us *all* things pertaining to Life and Godliness!

We also have the promise that all who *seek* will find "the Kingdom of God." How can religious leaders tell and convince you that you have *entered into* God's Kingdom when you join their church? They say they believe the Bible. Well, the Bible tells us to

(individually) seek, ask, and knock -- *and to continue to do so until we find and then enter into the Kingdom of God*. Obviously the entering through the door of the Kingdom of God does not occur until the door is found. How can they simply ignore the fact that to *grow* in the Knowledge of God which leads you into all Truth (including ministering to you an entrance or door into the Kingdom of God) is *the* Way and the *only* Way to achieve Christ Mind?

Operating in the Kingdom of God means to live and operate your life according to the Law of the Spirit of God. The word “Kingdom” means *power and authority*. The word “God” means *Spirit and Truth*. Until one’s mind is sufficiently renewed, he or she cannot receive this body of Spiritual Knowledge, namely the body of Knowledge which contains the *Law of the Spirit of Life!* This body of Knowledge is the authority by which the “Kingdom of God” operates.

If your belief system about being “saved” matches what we have said here, I said all this to impress upon your mind the absolute necessity that you must *continue* in your search for Truth until you receive Divine visitation in the form of Divine Revelation. Then and then *only* will *anyone* be able to declare of a Truth, “*Now Know I!*” Then and then only will you be able to make the declaration as Jesus did when he said, “*My words are Spirit and Life and they will never pass away.*” As long as your words continue to pass away, *you continue to pass away with them. They are unprofitable seed!*

If you still believe that you are “saved” after considering what I have written here, then I ask you: by what authority do you conduct your life if it fails to empower you and provide you with the ability to overcome your carnal nature, along with its weaknesses and appetites? *Entrance into the Kingdom of God empowers you!*

We have seen many rise and fall in the world of religion. Some of these who have publicly fallen include men and woman who have practiced their form of religion fifty or more years -- some of them

all of their lives -- and *still* they are not *free*, yet they all profess to be *saved*. *They profess to have entered God's Kingdom!* To be free from death and the wrongdoings we discussed earlier means to be *free from* or *free of* the mind that produces the behaviors that produce death. As we have said, *if a person has stopped certain behaviors but still has the desire to do them, that person is not free and therefore he is not saved!*

The only way the old, beastly, carnal, vile *nature* can ever be changed is by the renewing of the mind. This is accomplished by walking continually toward the Light with a continuous desire and search for Truth. There is no source of strength to enable one to resist the temptations of the flesh except the Living Truth. The quickened and resurrected Christ Seed of Truth within the sincere and honest heart of the follower of Christ is the Power that was promised all who believe, receive, conceive of, and continue in Truth. These are taught and led by Spirit, and in this way they are empowered.

Seek Knowledge (but don't stop there). Seek Wisdom (but don't stop there). Continue your search *until* you find and get *Understanding!* Knowledge and Wisdom without *Understanding* belong to a fool. All who believe and pursue Life, abundant Life, exceedingly abundant Life, and Eternal Life *will find it!* The slothful, unbelieving, lazy, and unprofitable dweller in error will continue to taste of death, hell, and the grave time after time!

If you do not know what salvation is -- how would you know if you found it? It seems to me that highly placed and seemingly successful religious leaders who "fall" into the trap of "sin" when faced with temptation would think and ask themselves, "Why did I not have the ability, the desire, and the strength to resist this temptation?" After their failure to resist, instead of honestly asking this question, they do their very best to cover up their actions because of the shame, condemnation, guilt, and the financial devastation their failure produces in their lives -- not to mention



the pain their families experience. Instead of trying to deny or cover it up, it seems to me *that they should and would reexamine their doctrine and their understanding of it.*

This is a word to the wise. Any doctrine that *does not deliver or “save” one* from the addiction and appetites that produce undesirable behaviors (whose end is death) is a ***false doctrine!*** The true doctrine of God sets all free who know and keep it by doing or living their life accordingly. The True and Living Word of God not only delivers one from his or her behaviors, but it also delivers an individual from any and *all* of the person’s old appetites and desires.

When the appetite for a thing is no more, then the need and desire for it is no more. The re-newing of the mind produces a *changed mind!* A changed or renewed mind produces new desires and a new nature. *Different desires and behaviors will always be experienced by the one who is truly saved!*

You *must* be born again! Being born again *must* be experienced as a *reality*, not just simply as a concept!

## **Appendices**

## Appendix 1

### THE PARALLELS OF FAITH, HOPE, AND CHARITY

Numerous times throughout this book we have mentioned that many words in the Bible really mean the same thing. One can be confused if one does not know the words are parallel or interchangeable.

Following is a list of some of the words that describe the different stages of Soul Consciousness that are depicted in the first and second Covenants and in this Body of Knowledge (Covenant).

Faith	-	Hope	-	Charity
First Covenant	-	Second Covenant	-	Last Covenant
Old Testament	-	New Testament	-	The Book of Lillie
Seed	-	Tree	-	Fruit
Life (Breath of Life) -		Abundant Life	-	Eternal Life
Great	-	Greater	-	Greatest
Father	-	Son	-	Holy Spirit
Knowledge	-	Wisdom	-	Understanding
Bondwoman	-	Freewoman	-	Zion
Fruit	-	More Fruit	-	Much More Fruit
Glory	-	More Glory	-	Fullness of Glory
Abraham	-	Isaac	-	Israel
Adam	-	Eve	-	Seth
Peace	-	Love	-	Joy
Man	-	Woman	-	Child
Word (Bread)	-	Flesh	-	Spirit
The Way	-	The Truth	-	The Life
Man	-	Christ	-	God
Little Children	-	Young Men	-	Fathers

These three are one, just as a child is in the seed of the man that is in the womb of a woman! The child, the man, and the woman are one because they are *within each other* in the same way that the fruit and the tree are both *in* the seed!

Regardless of what stage of growth each aspect of each generation is, though called by different names and each expressing in a different form, it is always *the One*.

A new generation begins with an embryo that is made of the combination of the bread (seed / man) and the flesh (egg / woman). As the embryo grows, it becomes a fetus, and afterwards it is called a child or baby when it is fully formed. At every stage, the beginning of the new Life is a Son of God. It is just as much a Son of God in the embryo state as when it is fully formed. All of these stages of growth, however, are the one and self-same new Life, or new beginning.

## Appendix 2

### **NAMES FOR THE DEVIL**

Following is a list of words or titles that have been assigned to “the devil.” Throughout this book we have already discovered *what* the devil is. I have listed the names most commonly used in the Scriptures to refer to the devil, however there are many more names that are not listed here.

Accuser (John 5:45; Revelation 12:10)  
Allegory (Galatians 4:24)  
Angel of Light (2 Corinthians 11:14)  
Baal (Romans 11:4)  
Cunningly Devised Fables (2 Peter 1:16)  
Dark Sayings (Proverbs 1:6; Psalms 49:4; 78:2)  
Dark Sentences (Daniel 8:23)  
Darkness (Luke 11:34)  
Deceiver (Revelation 20:10; 12:9)  
Devourer (1 Peter 5:8; Malachi 3:11)  
Dogs (Philippians 3:2; Matthew 7:6)  
Dragon (Revelation 20:2)  
Evil (Luke 11:4)  
Examples (Hebrews 8:5)  
Fables (1 Timothy 1:4)  
False Doctrine (1 Timothy 4:1)  
False Prophet (2 Peter 2:1)  
Father of Lies (John 8:44)  
Figure of Speech (Hebrews 9:24)  
Idle Talk (Luke 24:11; 1 Timothy 5:13)  
Idol (1 Corinthians 8:4)  
Image (Romans 1:23; Revelation 14:9)  
Jewish Fables (Titus 1:14)

Liar (John 8:44)  
Like Unto (Revelation 1:13)  
Likeness (Philippians 2:7)  
Old Wives' Fables (1 Timothy 4:7)  
Parable (Mark 4:2)  
Prince of this World (John 12:31)  
Proverb (Ezekiel 17:2)  
Riddle (Ezekiel 17:2)  
Satan (Revelation 12:9)  
Serpent (Revelation 20:2)  
Shadowy Thing (Hebrews 8:5)  
Story (2 Chronicles 13:22; 24:27)  
Swine (Mark 5:16)  
Tale (Psalms 90:9)  
Tale Bearer (Proverbs 26:22)  
Tempter (Matthew 4:3)  
Wolves in Sheep's Clothing (Matthew 7:15)

## Appendix 3

### **LEARNING MORE ABOUT THIS MESSAGE**

If the Message of Life in this book bears witness in your spirit and you would like to meet others who are passionate about discovering their True Self, we invite you to contact us through the mail or email or Internet addresses listed at the front of this book.

We humbly and with joyful expectation look forward to the reunions awaiting us with those who have waited their whole life's journey for such a message as this. Do you wish to experience the true fellowship of kindred spirits who are committed to their manifestation as Sons of God here on earth? Have you felt that you have been waiting to do something important, something that your whole life has prepared you to do? As our planet and its people transition into the next dispensation of Soul evolution, we sense an urgency and opportunity to come together to express our Divine Design and true hearts' desires.

It is for this reason that Spirit is drawing and calling forth individuals to participate in The University of Spiritual Awakening, Inc. and The Lillie Center for Health & Nutrition (TLCHN). The University is what man has come to know as a "church," and The Lillie Center for Health & Nutrition is one of its outreaches. The *Lillie* in this phrase refers to the Wisdom from Above, as described in this book. The *Center* refers to Source. *Health* is that of the whole Man: Spirit, Soul, Mind, and Body. *Nutrition* is that which supports Life. The Lillie Center for Health & Nutrition is saying "*come to the Inner Source of Wisdom for Holistic Health and Life.*"

TLCHN is a growing and developing concept for this new time in which we live. TLCHN is both an idea *and a place* of fellowship and personal health and dietary improvement. In addition, it will be a place where new inventions inspired by Spirit manifest here on planet Earth. It is a seed (word, or idea) of a changed world. There will be numerous geographic sites of The Lillie Center for Health & Nutrition.

If you desire to know and manifest Truth and health; if this message fuels a song of certainty and joy within you; and if you would like to become involved in TLCHN, we with much anticipation await your contact with us.



## NOTES

## NOTES

## NOTES

## NOTES

## NOTES

## NOTES